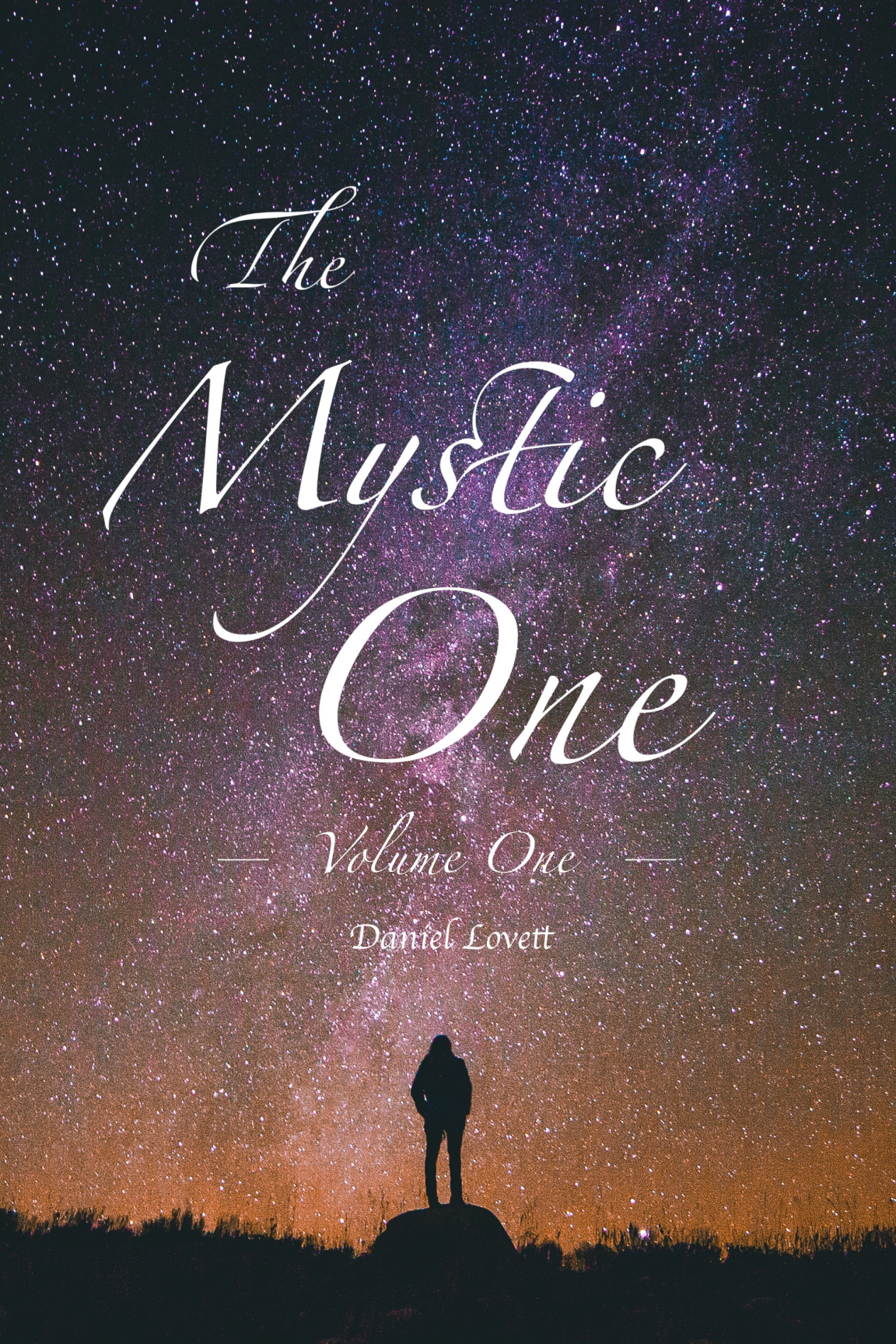


The background of the entire image is a night sky filled with stars. A bright, vertical band of light, representing the Milky Way, runs through the center of the frame. At the bottom, a dark silhouette of a person stands on a small rock or mound, looking up at the stars. The overall color palette is dark, with purples, blues, and oranges from the starlight and the horizon glow.

The Mystic One

— *Volume One* —

Daniel Lovett

The Mystic

One

— *Volume One* —

*“Experience the Mystery of Christ,
Enjoy a Friendship with God”*

Daniel Lovett

TABLE OF CONTENTS

//

Forward:	Brian Simmons
Preface:	Me, Throwing You a Rope
Preamble:	Can You Keep a Secret?
Prelude:	Message from Jesus
One:	Welcome to Your Awakening!
Two:	Jesus Encounter
Three:	Divine Visitation
Four:	“What’s Up My Dude?”
Five:	“Give Me Back My Stuff!”
Six:	Listening to Jesus
Seven:	The Mystic One
Eight:	Jesus is Perfect Theology
Nine:	Dreams of Oneness
Ten:	Rabbi Jesus
Eleven:	Father’s Heart
Twelve:	Experiencing Divine Love
Thirteen:	"Dance With Me!"
Fourteen:	“You Can Never Escape My Love”
Fifteen:	The Shining
Sixteen:	Ahava, His Banner is Love

— *Part Deux* —

Chapter 17:	Storming the Castle
Chapter 18:	“If”
Chapter 19:	Merging into God
Chapter 20:	Our Mystical Union With God
Chapter 21:	Partakers of the Divine Nature

Epilogue:	Prophetic Words
Postlude:	Method Acting

— *Dedication* —

Afterword:	Stop Censoring Me
Preview:	Every Whit Whole
About the Author	

Forward

In a world filled with distractions and noise, "The Mystic One" by Daniel Lovett emerges as a refreshing beacon of spiritual truth and revelation. This remarkable account of a divine visitation is not only a testament to Daniel's personal journey but also an invitation for each of us to experience the depths of God's glory in our own lives.

From the very first page, readers are drawn into a narrative that is both captivating and enlightening. Daniel's vivid portrayal of his encounter with the divine serves as a catalyst for spiritual awakening, urging us to delve deeper into our relationship with God. His masterful storytelling, combined with rich scriptural references and practical activations, creates a powerful framework for understanding the profound mysteries of faith.

As you journey through this brilliantly crafted book, prepare to be challenged, inspired, and transformed. Daniel Lovett's words will guide you face-to-face with the One you love, igniting a passion for intimacy with the divine that is both exhilarating and life-changing.

Get ready to embark on an extraordinary adventure, one that will take you to places of spiritual depth and insight previously unimagined. "The Mystic One" is not just a book; it is a divine encounter waiting to unfold in your life. Embrace it, and allow the glory of God to envelop you in ways you have never experienced before. You will love every moment of this journey!

— Brian Simmons, of The Passion Translation
(www.passionandfire.com)

The Scriptures are given by God to us for our spiritual growth:

“God has transmitted his very substance into every Scripture, for it is God-breathed. It will empower you by its instruction and correction, giving you the strength to take the right direction and lead you deeper into the path of godliness. Then you will be God’s servant, fully mature and perfectly prepared to fulfill any assignment God gives you.”
— 2 Timothy 3:16-17, The Passion Translation

This book, *The Mystic One*, relies heavily upon the Holy Scriptures from many different translations in order to guide you in your journey and discovery that God is better than you think He is, and God loves you more than you think He does.

Bible Translation Copyright notices:

The English translations of the Holy Scriptures are like *The Dramatic Song*, by Tobuscus (*see YouTube*), in that “a perfect translation does not exist, well, at least, not in your language.” Thankfully, we all have access to the Author of the Bible. We have access to the Living Word in our connection with the LOGOS, the one we refer to in English as Jesus Christ.

Scripture quotations marked TPT are from The Passion Translation®. Copyright © 2017, 2018, 2020 by Passion & Fire Ministries, Inc. Used by permission. All rights reserved.
ThePassionTranslation.com.

Scripture quotations marked NLT are taken from the *Holy Bible*, New Living Translation, copyright © 1996, 2004, 2015 by Tyndale

House Foundation. Used by permission of Tyndale House Publishers, Inc., Carol Stream, Illinois 60188. All rights reserved.

Scripture quotations marked ESV are from The ESV® Bible (The Holy Bible, English Standard Version®). ESV® Text Edition: 2016. Copyright © 2001 by Crossway, a publishing ministry of Good News Publishers. The ESV® text has been reproduced in cooperation with and by permission of Good News Publishers. Unauthorized reproduction of this publication is prohibited. All rights reserved.

Scripture quotations marked AMP are from The Amplified Bible Copyright © 2015 by The Lockman Foundation, La Habra, CA 90631. All rights reserved. See <http://www.lockman.org/>

Scripture quotations marked NASB are from The New American Standard Bible®, Copyright © 1960, 1971, 1977, 1995, 2020 by The Lockman Foundation. All rights reserved.

Scripture quotations marked NET are from the NET Bible® copyright ©1996-2017 All rights reserved. Build 30170414 by Biblical Studies Press, L.L.C.

Scripture quotations marked NIV are from THE HOLY BIBLE, NEW INTERNATIONAL VERSION®, NIV® Copyright © 1973, 1978, 1984, 2011 by Biblica, Inc.® Used by permission. All rights reserved worldwide.

Scripture quotations marked MSG are taken from *THE MESSAGE*, copyright © 1993, 2002, 2018 by Eugene H. Peterson. Used by permission of NavPress. All rights reserved. Represented by Tyndale House Publishers, Inc.

Scripture quotations marked NKJV are taken from the New King James Version®. Copyright © 1982 by Thomas Nelson. Used by permission. All rights reserved.

Scripture quotations marked WEB are taken from the World English Bible and is in the Public Domain. That means that it is not copyrighted. However, "World English Bible" is a Trademark.

You may copy, publish, proclaim, distribute, redistribute, sell, give away, quote, memorize, read publicly, broadcast, transmit, share, back up, post on the Internet, print, reproduce, preach, teach from, and use the World English Bible as much as you want, and others may also do so. All we ask is that if you CHANGE the actual text of the World English Bible in any way, other than changing from American to British spelling or vice versa, you not call the result the World English Bible anymore. This is to avoid confusion, not to limit your freedom. The Holy Bible is God's Word. It belongs to God. He gave it to us freely, and we who have worked on this translation freely give it to you by dedicating it to the Public Domain.

The Mystic One: © 2025 Daniel Lovett

www.daniellovett.com

Connect with Daniel @ Youtube - search for "The Mystic One"
or go directly to: <https://www.youtube.com/@DanielLovett>

Cover photo: <https://pxhere.com/en/photo/824458> - Public Domain

Inigo: "Is there any way you trust me?"
Westley: "Nothing comes to mind."
Inigo: "I swear on the sword of my father,
Domingo Montoya, you will reach the top alive."
Westley: "Throw me the rope."
— from *The Princess Bride*, William Goldman

Me, Throwing You a Rope

Preface

I love movies... You love movies. See how much in common we have already? I can feel us forming bonds of eternal friendship even now.

Captain's Log, Star Date: 03032025

As a young man of twenty-two, I watched *The Matrix*¹ in the theatre. This morning I bounded out of bed and launched into a

¹ Yes, I chose the British spelling for *theatre*... that tells you a LOT about me... or not. Please forgive me if a reference to a rated R movie offends you. As a homeschool dad, I told my daughter that most of our trauma is self induced. Every rated R movie has contributed to my own personal trauma. My advice regarding any film is to ask Jesus: Is this something you want me to watch? If he gives you the thumbs up 👍, then ask Jesus to watch the film with you.

Scripture says, "So above all, guard the affections of your heart, for they affect all that you are. Pay attention to the welfare of your innermost being, for from there flows the wellspring of life." (Proverbs 4:23 TPT)

My advice: care for your soul as you would your own toddler.

detailed explanation to my oldest daughter of why I appreciate the movie, *The Matrix*.

I recount to her the rooftop fight scene from memory as it played out in my mind, and then I tell her:

“After Neo and Trinity had dealt with the agents on the roof, Trinity contacts Tank, the ‘operator’ on board their ship, the Nebuchadnezzar, for a program to fly a military B-212 helicopter. Tank downloads the program to Trinity’s consciousness in mere seconds. Trinity then descends the chopper down the side of the building a few floors to where their leader, Morpheus, is being held. Neo is ready at the machine gun in a harness connected to a rope.

Morpheus, their beloved friend and leader, sits slumped over, handcuffed to a chair. The agents had methodically worked to break Morpheus to extract from him the access codes to Zion, the last free city, that every ship commander had been entrusted with. They had injected a cocktail of drugs to weaken him. Agent Smith had tried to convince him to see humanity as a virus that needed to be expunged, saying, “You are the disease, and we... are the cure.” Morpheus had nearly been psychologically broken. He had nearly lost faith.

But then, Morpheus looks up to see his friends suddenly appear out the window in a chopper. Neo unloads the machine gun at the agents. Shattering glass flies everywhere as Neo takes out every agent in the room.

Morpheus summons his strength and pulls the handcuffs apart as he releases a guttural war cry! His friends have stirred his hope and his strength, once again. He stands and runs toward his friends to launch himself into the helicopter. A respawned Agent Smith rushes in and takes aim at Morpheus.

"BOOM! BOOM! BOOM!"

Bullets fly past Morpheus, and one finds its mark. Morpheus stumbles as a bullet pierces his calf.

"He's not going to make it," Neo says to himself and immediately launches himself out toward Morpheus, colliding with him in mid-air. He manages to lock his grip around his wrist as they fall.

"Got ya!"

Neo and Morpheus are now hanging at the end of that long rope attached to the chopper. Agent Smith walks up, takes aim, and disables the chopper. The chopper is going down, and Trinity fights at the controls to manage its descent. Trinity succeeds in dropping Morpheus and Neo safely on the roof of a nearby building, and we see the chopper, in serious trouble, careening sideways down over the edge of the building and out of sight.

Neo, instead of detaching himself from the rope to save himself, wraps the rope around his arms a few times and tightens his grip, determined to save Trinity. Neo is launched off his feet as the rope goes dangerously taught. He is dragged violently across the roof. He braces his legs on the walled edge of the building, still holding the rope securely. Trinity ducks back to the bay of the chopper, grabs the rope, shoots it free from the chopper, and swings toward the building to where Neo and Morpheus are.

We watch as the now-empty chopper smashes into a neighboring skyscraper, and the glass, in true Matrix style, ripples out ominously before shattering glass explodes. Neo, arm over arm, hauls Trinity to the top and pulls her to safety.

Morpheus, astounded, looks at Trinity and says, "Do you believe now, Trinity?"

—————< end scene>—————

In a “secular” college psychology class (circa 2003), we were asked to give a visual slideshow presentation of our lives. We were to share our plans for the future, our dream car, our faith, our family, and the things that mattered to us. When I arrived at the part of my presentation where we were asked to share our faith, I showed them a picture of Morpheus sitting in that chair with the handcuffs on, about to lose his faith.

“This is me,” I told them. “I would be lost if Jesus hadn’t launched a rescue operation for me. Jesus is the “One”... my Neo, whom I trust. He came to my rescue, and he will always come to my rescue. I know this because he always has. Jesus has proven himself worthy of my trust. Jesus reignites my hope when it fails. He is my *Only* Hope. He brings me back to life when I feel absolutely dead inside. When I have lost all faith, Jesus inspires and reignites faith in me once more. Jesus has proven himself faithful in my life. He saved me... and he will continue to save me. If he doesn’t... I am lost... forever.”

Neo came to believe, after his meeting with the Oracle earlier in *The Matrix* film, that he is actually exchanging his life for Morpheus. He is convinced that he is not getting out of this alive. But still, he makes the choice to sacrifice himself for his friend. Neo engaged in this rescue of Morpheus because he knew that he could do it, but *only* at the cost of his own life.

I’m sure you see the parallels with the message of Jesus.

Jesus once said, “There is no greater love than to lay down one’s life for one’s friends.” (John 15:13 NLT)

Jesus has made the ultimate sacrifice. He knew he wasn’t getting out of this alive, but he made that choice. Jesus has laid down his life for you and me. He invites us to experience and enjoy his friendship and to fully enjoy our new lease on life.

This book is about Jesus, who has loved you at the cost of his

own life. Jesus never gives up on you. When he sees you going down, he braces himself, wraps that rope a few times around his wrists and digs in, hoping beyond hope that you will have the wisdom and sense to grab the end of that rope... and trust him.

This book is *a* rope. I, entity currently known as “Daniel Lovett”, the “author”, am *a* rope.

Jesus is the *One*, your “Neo”, who leaps out to you on this, and any and every other rope at his disposal, to clasp you in his grip and say to you, as he looks you in the eye, “Got ya!”

Jesus is the *One*, who gives no thought to himself or his own safety as that rope goes taut, yanks him off his feet, and drags him violently across the rough terrain of a first-century Roman cross.

Jesus is the *One* who hauls you up that rope, arm over arm, into the safety of his loving embrace of friendship.

All for love’s sake.

So... this is me, *metaphorically*, throwing you a rope. Because of what I know of Jesus and his faithfulness and love... and because I have the slightest inkling of how ‘good’ the Good News of Jesus is, I can confidently assure you:

“You will reach the top alive.”

Sincerely yours,

The word "Rope" is written in a stylized, rope-like font. The letters are thick and have a twisted, rope-like texture. The 'R' is particularly large and has a loop at the top. The 'o' is a simple circle with a rope texture. The 'p' has a long, curved tail that loops back. The 'e' is a simple shape with a rope texture. The entire word is rendered in a black and white line-art style.

"Is it secret? Is it safe?"

— Gandalf, The Lord of the Rings, J.R.R. Tolkien

Can you keep a secret?

Preamble

Let us begin our session together with a responsive reading:

Me: *Can you keep a secret?*

You can't tell anyone... I mean it.

If anybody finds out about this, it could be very, very bad... I'm not sure why.

Y'all: *We won't tell anyone. And if we do, we'll tell them not to tell anyone.*

Me: *Perfect!*

First thing this morning, God said to me, "Can you keep a secret?" Immediately, the above scene from the film, *Horton Hears a Who*, played out in my mind.

I was asked yesterday, "What animated character do you most relate to?"

I answered, "Horton".

Who doesn't love Horton?

Horton is such a great role model... for an animated character.

Horton is portrayed as innocent and kind. Is there anyone Horton doesn't love? Is there anyone whom Horton doesn't consider a friend? Horton showed respect and honor to everyone, considering all worthy of love. He was forgiving and

compassionate, never holding hard feelings toward the other animals, despite any harm they may have caused him. Horton is like Jesus in this way.

Once, while camping out in the backyard with my kids in a tent, I told them a bedtime story about a monkey named Gaspar. When I realized I was onto something, I grabbed my ukulele and wrote the following song:

A Monkey Named Gaspar 🎵

A monkey named Gaspar,
Lived in the jungle,
Making friends with snakes and crocodiles,
Elephants and kangaroos were also his play buddies,
And all of his friends made him smile.

In fact, there is no animal that Gaspar didn't like,
And don't you think that's how it should be?
We should all love each other as one big happy family,
Cuz you're the same kind of different as me

One day Gaspar walked along,
And saw a big tarantula,
And said, "Hey, fuzzy spider, won't you be my friend?"
And then he saw a scorpion,
And wanted to go cuddle him,
And said, "Hey, little guy, won't you be my friend?"

One day he met a hungry snake,
Who swallowed him just like a cake,
But then the snake missed Gaspar's warm, kind smile
So he spit him up, and that is how,

The snake and Gaspar became pals,
Yes, love will change our hearts after a while

There is no animal that Gaspar doesn't like,
And don't you think that's how it should be?
We should all love each other as one big happy family,
Cuz you're the same kind of different as me.²

This is how I imagine Horton to be. He is quick to forgive and even become fast friends with anyone who once considered Horton a menace or an enemy. He wishes he had never had an enemy. He is like Jesus in this way. Jesus loves his enemies and taught his followers to do the same.

Horton is safe for children... despite what the kangaroo thinks... she was wrong. He is like Jesus in this way. He loves to excite the children's imaginations. The kangaroo doesn't like this *one* bit.

Horton *loved* life. He enjoyed life. He became a connoisseur of life. He loved sharing his life with all those he loved, which was everyone. Horton didn't hesitate to share what meant most to him. He shared the secret about 'the speck' to all of his dearest friends who knew him and loved him. He is like Jesus in this way. Jesus *loves* to share the secret of the kingdom with his friends.

I am like Horton. I *love* life. I share my life with those I love. I don't hesitate to share what matters most to me. I share secrets with my friends. I am like Jesus in this way.

Because I love to share secrets with my friends, I have to ask
you a very **BIG** question...

² Adorable music video of Gaspar: https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=zpIDRSn_5eo

Will you be my friend?

<yes> or <no> (*circle your answer and pass it back*)

If you answered <no>, I do hope you will change your mind. You don't have my permission to be my enemy, you know, but I will respect your request for some relational distance... for now. Regretfully, this is where we part ways. You might as well put this book back on the bookshelf where you found it. Save your money for a burrito at Chipotle, and remember... don't get the lettuce if it won't fit in the burrito. Because, as everyone knows, the purpose of a burrito is to have all the ingredients of the burrito to be able to be retained within the tortilla of the burrito. No one wants a messy burrito. Good luck!

As we part ways, future friend, I will leave you with another word of advice. Do not pick your nose while driving over bumpy railroad tracks... *you'll just have to trust me on that one.*

Parting is such sweet sorrow... and so, dear future friend, I leave you with these beloved words from Elio, leader of Earth: 🌍

"Love you, okay, bye!"

If, however, you circled <yes>, then you are one of those rare, brave, beautiful, intelligent, and bold souls who have the uncanny courage to stand with Jesus, as *he* stands with his friend, entity currently known as Daniel Lovett... *that's me!*

Any friend of Jesus is a friend of mine!

Hello friend!

“Kundahai!”

This means “Welcome,” in my LIGHT language. ☀️

So, friend, would you like to know *the **most** wonderful* “secret”?

I’ve been dying to tell you and can hardly keep this to myself. I had to make sure that there were only friends still around before I could spill the beans about the secret... *apparently, I am not so great at keeping secrets.* I will have to whisper the secret to you, so would you please lean in real close as I share with you... 🤫🤫

The Secret: Jesus is “The Mystic One”

This is a book about encountering Jesus and developing a friendship with God. Or, as I put it in the description of this book:

*“Experience the Mystery of Christ,
Enjoy a Friendship with God.”*

You will come to grasp what this means as you continue this journey with me, but I have got to warn you... This is not a journey for the faint of heart. You will learn things you can’t unlearn. You will see things you can’t unsee. You won’t be the same hobbit who set off from the Shire after this journey is through, *There and Back Again*.

Just this morning in a dream, I looked up into the face of a *very* tall angel, complaining to him that there are precious few souls that I get to share these experiences with. That I truly get to share my Jesus with. I just want a few close companions, a few faithful friends, with whom to share this journey.

Are you one of them?

*“May you become progressively more
intimately acquainted with
and may know more
definitely and accurately and thoroughly
that mystic secret of God,
which is Christ,
the Anointed One.”*

— Colossians 2:2 AMPC

"Poppy, with your book... just spread the love of Jesus" —Emma Josephine Lovett Warrior Princess Fire Master 💜🔪🔥, age 11

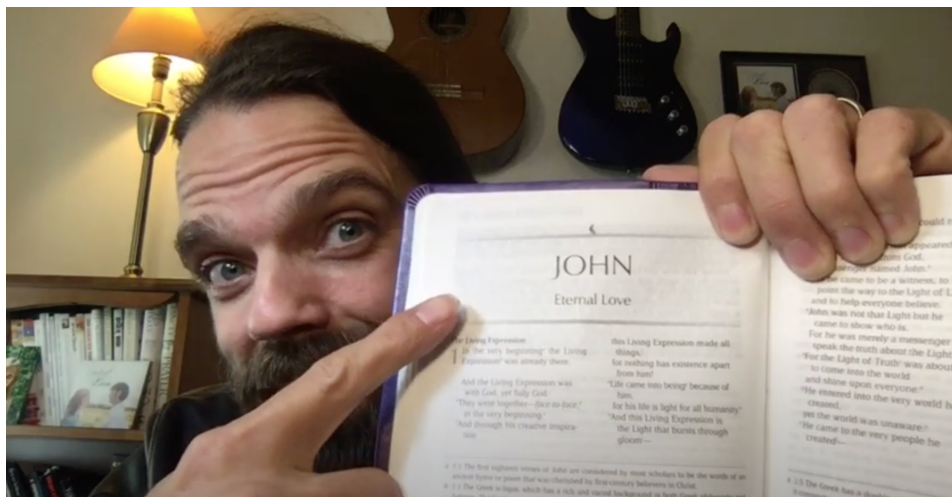
Message From Jesus

Prelude

Captain's Log, Stardate: 10182021

I awoke to Jesus standing at my bedside. *'How long had he been watching me sleep?'* I wondered. With a huge smile on his face, reflecting an infectious joy bursting from his being, he spoke: "Daniel, go and tell all your friends that if they want to get to know me..."

At this point, Jesus showed me a vision of me holding up a Bible, open to the Gospel of John, pointing to chapter one.



Jesus began to share this message telepathically:

“Marinate your mind in this Gospel. Just as Naaman immersed himself seven times in the Jordan River to receive healing for his physical leprosy,³ so now, immerse yourself and marinate your mind in the truth of this Gospel to receive healing for your *spiritual* leprosy. Refresh yourself in this life-giving message of the Gospel of John as many times as it takes and receive all the healing you need.”

The Gospel of John is a witness, a testimony, with the express purpose of connecting you in a relationship with Jesus. Written under the inspiration of the Holy Spirit by Jesus’ close and dear friend John, who identified himself as, “the disciple whom Jesus loved,” this Gospel’s purpose is that we might *know* we possess “eternal life” (John 20:31, 1 John 5:13). Jesus defines eternal life as an experiential knowing — as a *relationship* — with his Father and with himself (John 17:3). John presents Jesus as the One who is eternal Life (1 John 5:20).

Knowing Jesus Christ is Everything!

I am interested in discovering what the Apostle Paul was on about when he said, “Everything else is worthless when compared with the infinite value of knowing Christ Jesus my Lord. For his sake I have discarded everything else, counting it all as garbage, so that I could gain Christ and become one with him.” (Philippians 3:8-11 NLT)

Are you curious to discover for yourself the “infinite value of knowing Christ Jesus” that Paul was so captivated with? Are you curious what it means to “become one with Christ”?

³ Symptoms of leprosy include a lack of feeling and sensitivity that can prove fatal.

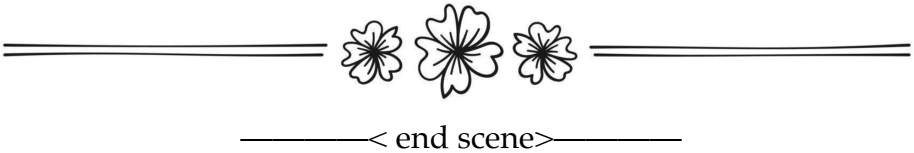
Me too.

Jesus said, "If you want to get to know me..."

Ball's in our court 🟡

ACTIVATION *Challenge:*

Schedule at least two hours (*and yes, I just googled: "How long does it take to read the Gospel of John?"*) where you can be alone and undisturbed. Grab a Bible (*I would suggest a good, readable translation such as the New Living Translation or The Passion Translation*) and read through the entire Gospel of John. And, most importantly, never forget to invite the Author, the always present and available Holy Spirit of Truth, who *always* leads us into *all* truth, to reveal Jesus and elucidate his Word to you as you read.



"CUT!" The director yells from the sidelines.

"Okay, that's a wrap, people. I think he nailed it. We were worried that he was going to get a little preachy and pretentious, but he pared it down quite a bit in the plethora of edits, making so many improvements by removing all of his sass, and most importantly, he seems to have remembered that he actually loves people. I think the opening quote from his daughter Emma is going to help guide the message and tone of the book in a really good direction that we can all get behind. I think Jesus would be proud. And who knows, Daniel seems to think they will go for this challenge... We, however, have our doubts."

post script:

I am reminded of the time when Jesus knocked the religious wind out of me (*in much the same way as when Fezzik knocked the wind out of Westley... you know, in that scene in the movie Princess Bride, when Fezzik slams Westley back against the rock wall several times to dislodge Westley because Westley was on his back slowly choking him out to put him to sleep... Remember?*) with the following verse from the Gospel of John, some 20+ years ago:

"You have your heads in your Bibles constantly because you think you'll find eternal life there. But you miss the forest for the trees. These Scriptures are all about me! And here I am, standing right before you, and you aren't willing to receive from me the life you say you want." — John 5:39, The Message

Okay, so that was not the translation I first read this verse in... but, *I LIKE IT!*

Here's the version I first read it in:

"You search the Scriptures, for in them you think you have eternal life; and these are they which testify of Me. But you are not willing to come to Me that you may have life." — John 5:39 NKJV

Basically, what this Scripture is saying is that you are holding up your bible in front of Jesus' face while simultaneously wondering where Jesus is. (*That last sentence came from my daughter Emma!*) I have now come to see, based on what Jesus says, that the Scriptures are *not* enough. You need more! You need what the Scriptures have always been "testifying of"!

My point is this:

“The Bible is the treasure map. Jesus is the treasure.”

We must come to him!

Jesus said:

“Come to me, all of you who are weary and carry heavy burdens, and I will give you rest. Take my yoke upon you. Let me teach you, because I am humble and gentle at heart, and you will find rest for your souls. For my yoke is easy to bear, and the burden I give you is light.” — Matthew 11:28
NLT

I remember the day I wrote a song inspired by this invitation from Jesus. I sat at my dining room table in the woes of depression, drinking a cup of tea. I heard Jesus begin to speak to my heart so clearly that I wrote down what he said in my journal. What he spoke to me that afternoon in my apartment became the lyrics of my song, *Come to Me*:

*Do you know how long, you've been on my mind?
Do you know, oh how I long, for you to know you're loved?
Do you know how long, I have been waiting for you now?
Oh, my aching heart, says it's been, far too long*

*Come to me, with your broken heart, and I will mend it
Come to me, with your confused mind, and I will cleanse it
Lean on me and let me be, the strength that you need
I am yours, won't you be mine?*

*I have wept these many days I've been without you
I have ached for so many nights, you thought you were alone
I was there, holding out my arms of invitation,
I am here now for you, your salvation*

*Come to me...*⁴ 

On many occasions when performing this song at concerts, I remember feeling the passion and longing of Jesus' heart surge in and through my own heart as I sang these prophetic words.

And you know what? Like many others, I too have struggled to believe that Jesus loved *me*. Hence the depression. I was willing to believe that perhaps there is someone else out there who would be one of those rare, lucky souls who could hear and respond and believe that *they* were the Beloved of God... but me? It has certainly taken some time for the reality of his love to fully sink in. This revelation has happened for me in stages over many years.

For instance, I remember one Easter morning, many years ago, I was delighted to *not* be in church. My broken relationship with God was too painful to have to endure another church service. That Easter morning, my wife and I were at a family gathering held at her brother's house in Stevens Point, Wisconsin. I found myself sitting out on the back porch with my young nephews. One of them played a song from his phone that caught my attention.

"What is that song?" I asked him.

"It's *How He Loves Us*, by Kim Walker Smith of Jesus Culture."

I went somewhere to be alone, looked up the song on my smartphone, and listened. In that moment, I felt Jesus' love for me for the first time in a while, and it moved me to tears.

⁴ www.reflect.bandcamp.com

Doesn't it make it easier to "come to Jesus" when you realize that you are approaching someone who actually loves you?

Let's once more examine that invitation from Jesus in a different Bible translation. I have always enjoyed how Eugene Peterson renders this passage in Matthew 11 in his Message translation:

"Are you tired? Worn out? Burned out on religion? Come to me. Get away with me and you'll recover your life. I'll show you how to take a real rest. Walk with me and work with me—watch how I do it. Learn the unforced rhythms of grace. I won't lay anything heavy or ill-fitting on you. Keep company with me and you'll learn to live freely and lightly." — Matthew 11:28-30 MSG

Jesus extends this personal invitation to each and every one of us. Notice that he doesn't force, but he invites. He calls us to come to him and then... God *must* wait for you to respond.

So the LORD must wait for you to come to him so he can show you his love and compassion. For the LORD is a faithful God. Blessed are those who wait for his help. — Isaiah 30:18 NLT

When I read that the LORD *must* wait for us to come to him, it reminded me of the parable Jesus told of the prodigal son (found in Luke 15). The Father in the story waited with anticipation and longing for the son to return home.

Lost

I am forever grateful for the day when I watched a short film of a modern retelling of the Prodigal Son. This film moves me to tears

nearly every time I recall or retell it. It paints a picture of a young man who had thoroughly destroyed his life. He was a drug addict who was in the habit of using anyone and everyone. His story involved some of the worst choices a person can make. Ughh... as the Bible says, the sins of the disobedient are shameful even to mention.

He had wounded everyone in his sphere of influence with his poor choices and caused untold relational damage, destroying the trust of his parents and everyone else... You get the picture.

After many years away from home on his own, he eventually discovers the end of his self-destructive path. This now broken and humbled man finally returns to his hometown. He calls up his parents from a payphone. They are not home at the time, so he leaves a message on their answering machine:

“Mom... Dad... I’m back in town. I understand if you don’t want to see me. I will come by the house later, and if you *do* want to see me, just leave a light on so I will know that I am welcome.”

He gets a cab ride to the house later that night and, to his astonishment, not only is the porch light on... every light in the entire house is on! His parents had even strung up Christmas lights along the porch and brought lamps out into the yard!

This is what our loving heavenly Papa is like! God leaves the lights on for you, for me, and ultimately... for everyone! He is the “Father of lights” (James 1:17), and his lights will lead *you* home!

“Lights will guide you home” - Chris Martin, Coldplay, *Fix You*⁵

⁵ <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=gXq-14IV79s>

Often, when I perform *Fix You* by Coldplay at my concerts, I will share this prodigal son story and then try to compose myself as I fight back the tears — nearly *every* time. Even the verses of *Fix You* remind me of our lovesick Papa who waits and watches for us to turn for home. Papa's brightest Light of all, His Son Jesus, will illuminate the Way and lead you home.

I once stumbled across a YouTube video that illustrates the patience of our Papa and his love for us. The video depicts an inconsolable toddler. She is wailing and sobbing, frustrated and angry. The father sits there patiently holding space for his daughter while she continues to "throw her tantrum". He lovingly waits for her until she is ready to receive his love. He shows her that he isn't going anywhere. He will be there when she is ready. Eventually, she comes to her father and melts into his arms. He holds her, rubs her back, and comforts her.

We all need *this* kind of father! We all *have* this kind of Father! I don't know about you, but I have experienced enough trauma in this world that had me convinced that Earth is hell. I wanted out. I knew suicide wasn't the answer. So I got sassy. I did my best to turn my tragedy into a comedy and decided to laugh my pain away by having fun. But all the while, I experienced such intense, inconsolable emotional pain and sadness. In some ways, I threw a tantrum. But all the while, my understanding Father, my Abba, held space for me. He has been there for me... waiting.

Eventually, like right now, in fact, I choose to collapse into his comforting arms and be held and healed by his love. I receive Papa's comfort and realize I am safe. I relax. I enter into what the Book of Hebrews describes as "the Sabbath rest". He's got me... so I am okay. I trust his love and experience peace.

The Proactive Love of Papa in Jesus

Right before sharing the Prodigal Son parable, Jesus talked about a Shepherd who went in search of a lost sheep *until* he found it. Jesus then compares God to a woman who carefully sweeps her house *until* she finds her lost valuable coin.

Do you see what's happening here? I see that our Father is not content to simply wait for us. No, our Father is proactive. Papa values us and loves us so much *that he sent* us his own dear Son, Jesus!

“For here is the way God loved the world—he gave his only, unique Son as a gift. So now everyone who believes in him will never perish but experience everlasting life.”—
John 3:16 The Passion Translation

Papa God has enlisted all the host of heaven and all the resources of heaven to back his Son in this Great rescue operation for *all* of us! Our Savior and Good Shepherd Jesus has come in search of all his lost sheep and will never quit his search *until* he carries every single one of his lost sheep on his shoulders back home as all of heaven joins to celebrate our return! (Read Luke 15)

Papa is too in love to let us go. And so, our loving Papa, in his avatar and Son Jesus, enters our trauma, our hell, and says to each and every one of us:

“I am not leaving here without you.”

There is a wonderful scene in the movie *What Dreams May Come*, in which Chris, the character played by Robin Williams, goes in search of his wife in the hopelessness and despair of hell. When at last he finds her, he tells her that he will not leave her. He will

stay with her no matter how long it takes. She refuses to believe him or come with him but he remains steadfast in his commitment to never leave her. He consigns himself to be with her in her hell, no matter what the cost may be for his own soul. He refuses heaven for himself to be with her instead. He chooses hell to be with her.

Everything goes dark for him psychologically. He joins her in her lost hope, and now they are both lost in the oblivion of despair. A few moments pass, and her heart is revived by his loving sacrifice. His “death” brings her back to her senses. Now revived, she then decides that it can’t end this way. She comes to restore *him* to life and succeeds.

I sobbed when I watched that part of the film. This is the Gospel. This was a picture of my Jesus staying with *me*, in *my* hell, refusing to ever leave me until I came around again. Jesus does the same for every last one of us. He will never leave you... He will never forsake you... He promises.

Imagine if a loving spouse genuinely tells their mate, “I love you”, and the other refuses to believe them or receive that love. You can see how this would create a dissonance that is experienced as misery in the one who refuses to believe and, perhaps even more so, in the one whose love is not believed and received.

Our unbelief and refusal of love from God *is* the essence of what we call “hell”. At its core, hell is a state of being of one who refuses love. When we refuse the love of God revealed in Jesus, we are choosing the misery of hell that our unbelief brings. But have we asked ourselves the question: How does our refusal to believe Papa’s love for us make Papa feel?

The Lord is bringing back to my mind a personal learning experience that illustrates this point.

One night, my depression and a deep grief came to a head like a ginormous pimple on the nose of an insecure adolescent. I drank an entire bottle of strawberry wine that I had made from the fresh sweet berries that graced the sunlit fields of Cuff Farms.

(Disclaimer: I do not endorse the use of alcohol any more than Jesus does)

I cried out to the Lord in my agony of mind and spirit. Something in me broke that night, and my sobs turned into a wail. This grief that came through that night turned into intercession for all the broken relationships in my life and all the broken people I knew. I cried out in anguish for all those whom God brought to my awareness.

I woke the next day with a hangover and a splitting headache. I drove to Milwaukee that morning to perform a Gospel concert at a nursing home. The sweet presence of the Lord came through me that day in such a precious way. The Good Shepherd gently ministered to every heart that morning through me, and I found myself saying to them all as we parted: “Jesus loves you and I love you!”

I walked out of the facility that day feeling love and joy bursting in my heart, despite my hangover, and Jesus clearly spoke the following words to me:

“I am so proud of you.”

The religious programmed part of me could only think of how displeased God must be at my having drunk so much wine the night before, and so I replied, “I don’t believe you.”

Jesus’ soul was *crushed*! I knew it instantly. I hurt him *SO* bad when I said what I said, and I knew it. The moment became a profound lesson. I never want to hurt Jesus like that again.

I came to realize that not believing Jesus is like being in a

marriage in which your spouse, who clearly and dearly loves you, and is serving and providing you with your every possible need, says to their beloved: "I love you."

How would that loving spouse feel when their significant other says, "I don't believe you"?

Agony.

There is a metaphor I have used to describe how I see our situation on Earth. I see us as patients in a psych ward *in heaven*. We are being gently and lovingly tended to by the angels until we all "come home" to our senses of how loved and cared for we actually are. This loving care will continue until we all come back to our senses and awaken to experience heaven... *where we have been the entire time!*

Think about it! Have we ever left the Presence of the One in whom we live and move and have our being, who happens to be perfect love? Heaven is not so much of a place as it is a Person. Jesus is that person.

God gives us all the freedom to throw our tantrums as long as we feel we need to. We can choose to remain eyes wide shut to his love and act out accordingly. He holds space for us and waits. What if, in all our kicking and screaming, we are heard and understood? The Bible instructs husbands to live with their wives in an understanding way. What if Jesus lives with *you* in an understanding way? This, too, is part of our sacred journey.

If you are like me, you might be thoroughly embarrassed about how you have conducted yourself in those times when you were throwing your tantrum. You may be dealing with heaps of shame when you realize that you have been part of the problem and not the cure, even though you managed to think fairly well of yourself and gave yourself a free pass.

The ego is full of self-justifications. We lie to ourselves all the time in a mad and fervent effort to avoid our shame.

But what if our shame is also embraced and healed by the Light of Papa's love?

I recall a podcast episode⁶ that blessed my heart and carries a most valuable lesson. In this talk, a man tells a parable. When I first heard it, I thought I was listening to a 'Near Death Experience Jesus Encounter'. It goes like this:

A man dies and finds himself in the dark woods. He strains his eyes for a bit of light somewhere... anywhere... and finally sees some light coming out of a window from a cabin in the distance. He walks to it and approaches the door. He opens the door and sees Jesus sitting in an armchair in front of a welcoming fire. He is embraced by Jesus and then told by him, "You have to go out and find the others. We cannot rest until you do."

This man leaves the cabin again and again to retrieve a plethora of other various versions of "himself" that represent his own broken, fractured soul. He brings them all to Jesus in the cabin until the cabin is full. Jesus says, "The party is ready to begin, but we need to retrieve the last remaining one."

The man knows of whom Jesus speaks. His cries can be heard from the basement.

He goes into the basement and finds Shame sitting hunched like a frightened Gollum in the dark. He cowers in the corner hoping to hide in the shadows. Slowly, the man reaches out lovingly and patiently. He eventually coaxes Shame to come up and join the rest of the others.

As soon as Shame emerges from the basement, the entire place

⁶ Simply Jesus Gathering podcast on Spotify

erupts with cheers and applause and, most of all, welcoming love! Jesus then approaches and embraces Shame in a healing embrace.

“Now the party can begin.” Jesus declares.



(Please take a moment to press *PAUSE*... and process what you have read and experienced thus far. Do this whenever you feel the need in order to *really* connect with God. This is the point of this book. *Selah* is a Hebrew word that often appears in the Psalms and can be translated, “Pause in his presence”. We would do well to do this as often as is appropriate.)

Post post script:

Yes, there is more.

Did you think I should have ended this chapter and started a new one?

Yes, well... a more sensible person might have.

I may just prove to appear less than sensible a time or two throughout this book. Writing a book can become a veritable maze of rabbit trails, and sometimes, you just have to follow them. They often lead you tumbling down into Wonderland.

It is known that first-century life in Israel was *very* religious. Every young man grew up in a religious community that met in synagogue every Sabbath with the reading of the Scriptures. The young men were trained to the point where they could read from the Tanakh, the Hebrew Scriptures, and were expected to,

beginning at the age of thirty.⁷

And yet, despite this biblically literate population of first-century Jews, the Gospel of John informs us that Jesus, “came into the very world he created, but the world didn’t recognize him. He came to his own people, and even they rejected him.” (John 1:10-11 NLT)

As Paul Young says, “When Jesus showed up, he was not recognizable inside the paradigm that religion had constructed.”

Our paradigms — our perspectives through which we view reality — have always been the problem. We approach God with our expectations instead of childlike expectancy. Our sight needs healing, but we cannot be healed from our spiritual blindness as long as we still claim we can see! (John 9)

All that to say, the reality of Jesus is *WAY* beyond and far superior to the mere curriculum of the Scriptures, all of which were only intended to introduce you to the very *real* experience of his friendship! *According to Jesus... remember? From earlier?*

This is *NOT*, however, intended in any form or fashion to dismiss, denigrate, disparage, or even to dissuade you from making a lifelong study of every word of Scripture! Memorize the whole God blest’ed divine message! There is no fault in loving God with *all* your mind! It’s part of *the* GREATEST commandment!

“One of them (*a Pharisee*), an expert in religious law, tried to trap him (*Jesus*) with this question:

“Teacher, which is the most important commandment in the law of Moses?”

⁷ This is, incidentally, why Jesus did not begin his public ministry until he traveled thirty times around the sun... also incidentally, perhaps why God suggested that Jeremiah not allow anyone to despise his youth.

Jesus replied, “‘You must love the Lord your God with all your heart, all your soul, and all your mind.’ This is the first and greatest commandment. — Matthew 22:36-38 NLT

Saul, who we have now come to know as the apostle Paul, as a former top-of-his-class student (disciple) of the renowned rabbi Gamaliel, and a self-proclaimed “Pharisee of Pharisees”, was no doubt well familiar with the whole of Scripture. But, with all of his religious zeal and devotion, and all of his memorized Scripture, did he demonstrate love for God with all his heart, all his soul, and all his mind?

Saul stood by and supported the stoning to death of the first known Christian martyr, Stephen. Directly following this murder of Stephen, “Saul was trying to destroy the church; entering one house after another, he dragged off both men and women and put them in prison” (Acts 8:3 NET). In his zeal, he was, “breathing out threats to murder the Lord’s disciples.” (9:1) The apostle Paul’s legacy is as one who *formerly* persecuted followers of Christ, hounding them to imprisonment and even to their death... that is, until he encountered Jesus on the road to Damascus and his life became radically reshaped and reformed.

You know what I’m thinking? I’m thinking that since this is a book dedicated to encounters with Jesus, we ought to honor the apostle Paul’s encounter with Jesus by devoting some space right here and now to Paul’s encounter with Jesus! (I probably *could* have saved some space in this book by trimming the fat off of those previous sentences... and definitely *NOT* including this current sentence that you are, in fact, right now reading, about me explaining how I should have more thoroughly edited the previous bit... which you have to admit, was not *really* quite as efficient as it should or could have been written... in my opinion... actually, when I think about it, this whole paragraph could likely

be deleted and no one would even miss it. Does it say anything useful at all? At this point, I would likely argue that humor is always useful, and this very lengthy, useless paragraph amuses me. I find it cathartic to ramble on so and torment my readers with my trivial sense of humor... *tra-la-la!*)

And so, without any further ado... the conversion of the apostle Paul in the WEB translation⁸:

“But Saul, still breathing threats and slaughter against the disciples of the Lord, went to the high priest and asked for letters from him to the synagogues of Damascus, that if he found any who were of the Way, whether men or women, he might bring them bound to Jerusalem. As he traveled, he got close to Damascus, and suddenly a light from the sky shone around him. He fell on the earth, and heard a voice saying to him, “Saul, Saul, why do you persecute me?”

He said, “Who are you, Lord?”

The Lord said, “I am Jesus, whom you are persecuting. It’s hard for you to kick against the cattle prods (*goads*). Rise up and enter into the city, then you will be told what you must do.”

The men who traveled with him stood speechless, hearing the sound, but seeing no one. Saul arose from the ground, and when his eyes were opened, he saw no one. They led him by the hand, and brought him into Damascus. He was without sight for three days, and neither ate nor drank.

⁸(Backstory on the WEB  translation: All the spidermen of the multiverse convened at the council of, “Let’s make a translation that is copyright and hassle-free for people (such as Daniel) to copy and paste large portions of into another book that someone (again, likely named Daniel) is going to write so that he doesn’t have to worry about getting sued by a Bible translation company”, and graciously made the WEB translation. God be praised! Very nice of you guys! Thanks, Peter Parkers! Thanks, Spidermen! We love y’all!)

Now there was a certain disciple at Damascus named Ananias. The Lord said to him in a vision, "Ananias!"

He said, "Behold, it's me, Lord."

The Lord said to him, "Arise, and go to the street which is called Straight, and inquire in the house of Judah for one named Saul, a man of Tarsus. For behold, he is praying, and in a vision he has seen a man named Ananias coming in and laying his hands on him, that he might receive his sight."

But Ananias answered, "Lord, I have heard from many about this man, how much evil he did to your saints at Jerusalem. Here he has authority from the chief priests to bind all who call on your name."

But the Lord said to him, "Go your way, for he is my chosen vessel to bear my name before the nations and kings, and the children of Israel. For I will show him how many things he must suffer for my name's sake."

Ananias departed and entered into the house. Laying his hands on him, he said, "Brother Saul, the Lord, who appeared to you on the road by which you came, has sent me that you may receive your sight and be filled with the Holy Spirit." Immediately something like scales fell from his eyes, and he received his sight. He arose and was baptized. He took food and was strengthened. Saul stayed several days with the disciples who were at Damascus. Immediately in the synagogues he proclaimed the Christ, that he is the Son of God. All who heard him were amazed, and said, "Isn't this he who in Jerusalem made havoc of those who called on this name? And he had come here intending to bring them bound before the chief priests!"

But Saul increased more in strength, and confounded the Jews who lived at Damascus, proving that this is the Christ..."

(and then... and then... There was this whole plot to murder him...)

and then...and, don't you wish you could read the whole bloomin' story for yourself? Well, have I got news for you! You can! Paul's story (as well as all of his supporting cast and crew, past, present, and future) has been published and is widely circulated in this book called "The Bible". What you just read was from the book of Acts, chapter 9:1-22)

Yeshua (a.k.a. Jesus) forged a friendship and partnership with Saul. He inspired Saul (a.k.a. Paul) to go on to write a huge portion of the New Covenant Scripture (the New Testament). The Holy Spirit of Yeshua inspired Paul to wax eloquent with *Great* Wisdom to reveal the mysteries of God to us. God enlivened and restored every bit of any investment Saul had made in God's word, for as the Scripture says, "My word does not return void but accomplishes the purpose for which I sent it." And what is the purpose for which God has sent his word?

Jesus enlightens us regarding this very question in the Gospel of John:

For I did not speak on My own, but the Father Himself who sent Me has given Me a commandment *as to* what to say and what to speak. And I know that His commandment is eternal life; therefore the things I speak, I speak just as the Father has told Me." — John 12:49-50
NASB

Father's command *is* eternal life! Well, isn't *that* somethin'? Maybe we should look into that? Perhaps we ought to even do a research project on this... ya know?

I want to wrap up this chapter by telling you of one of my encounters with reading the Gospel of John that saved my life!

I thought I was **LOST**... like, for good. Do you know what that feels like? If you do, I am *SO* sorry! But, not to worry, I am your poster boy of hope. Yes, there *is* hope for the lost! Here is my story — at least one of the many stories from my own spiritual journey you'll likely find interesting:

One day, many many moons ago (likely before Blockbuster and Radio Shack went out of business, and just after Al Gore invented the internet), I was reading the Gospel of John, looking for a loophole in the Scriptures for Daniel to find salvation... and I found it! I found my answer right there in John 6:37:

"However, those the Father has given me will come to me, and I will never reject them." — Jesus, John 6:37 NLT

Jesus, who cannot lie, promises to **NOT** reject (*and by extension, to receive*) **ALL** who come to him!!!

"I am coming to you, Jesus! Ha! In your face, Jesus! No matter what kind of a jerk you and I both suspect I am, you can't get rid of me now! You HAVE to receive me! You promised! Even if I turn out to be an incorrigible brat like that boy in the book, "The Ransom of Red Chief,"⁹ and totally drive you crazy!"

I actually thought I caught Jesus in THE GREATEST cosmic mystical glorious loophole of *any* century... an' dag'gummit, I was tickled pink!

⁹ The Ransom of Red Chief, a short story by O. Henry, was published in 1910. In the story, two kidnappers make off with the young son of a prominent man only to find that the child is more trouble than he is worth; in the end, they agree to pay the boy's father to take him back. I became aware of this short story in the course of participating in the homeschool life of my children.

*"He tricked hisself into guaranteeing my acceptance... and I caught him!
Can you believe it? ...I feel SO smart! I feel like Sherlock Holmes er
sump'm!" <the previous bit **must** be read in a Hicksville, Kentucky
accent>*

Okay... so I admit, that was my broken perspective at the time.

The truth is — *and Jesus backs me up on this point* — I am a gift to Jesus from the Father! The Father gave *me* to Jesus. This is shown by the fact that I *came* to Jesus. The Father doesn't give crap gifts to his Son. He *only* gives good gifts to his Son!

"You, Daniel, are a good gift to my Son." Father declares.

Father says the same to you:

"You, _____ (<— *insert your name here*), are a good gift to my Son, Jesus."

And Jesus promises to give eternal life to all those whom the Father has given him... ALL those who come to him! Here is the evidence, straight from Jesus:

"Father, the hour has come. Glorify Your Son, that Your Son also may glorify You, as You have given Him authority over all flesh, that He should give eternal life to as many as You have given Him. And this is eternal life, that they may know You, the only true God, and Jesus Christ whom You have sent." — John 17:2-3 NKJV

These verses have formed a proof, much like a mathematical geometric proof, that we can know with absolute certainty that we (you and I) possess eternal life!

I am IN!!! I am secure in the love and care of my Good

Shepherd and my loving Papa! I am secure and safe in his family, and this shall never be revoked... an' y'all are "IN" too!!!

You can have this same assurance!
Say it with me now:

"I am secure in the love and care of Jesus, my Good Shepherd, and my loving Papa."

The Gospel of John saved my life! Jesus restored me to *LIFE*! Just like Lazarus, he has brought me back to life (John 11) by the power of his word! I now know Jesus, the Mystic One, who *is* my Salvation!

You can too!

Now... are you up for that Gospel of John reading challenge?

Pray with me:

*"Jesus, I desire to know you. Settle my heart into the comfortable rhythms of your grace — your favor toward me. Thank you for being more real than I could ever imagine. Thank you for your word, and for **being** the Word of God's kindness to us. You are the evidence, Jesus, that God is Good. Open our eyes, Holy Spirit, as we open our Bibles to the Gospel of John. As we read, we ask that you would elucidate, and make manifest, our Savior, revealing Jesus and our Father to us. May we grow in our connection and relationship with you both now and forever and always. We are forever grateful. Amen."*

“We have come into an intimate experience with God’s love, and we trust in the love he has for us.” — 1 John 4:16 TPT

“Jesus loves you more than you will know.” — Paul Simon, of *Simon and Garfunkel*

Welcome to Your Awakening!

Chapter One

I sat in my car at a red light on the corner of Bluemound and Northland Avenue in Appleton, Wisconsin, on a sunny August afternoon when Jesus unmistakably spoke these words in my heart:

“Daniel, don’t you know I created you to love you?”

The relief that flooded through my being at hearing these words was palpable. This simple encounter with Jesus charted a new course in my life, as my very purpose for existence had now been defined by love. I went from wondering if I was a lab rat in some cosmic experiment that sometimes seemed cruel, to being introduced to the idea that I am secure in God’s love.

If we only knew...

Somehow, I grasped in that moment that what Jesus had just spoken to me would inevitably and eventually result in freedom from all my mistaken, toxic ideas of God and the nature of reality, which had long perplexed and tormented me. One word from Jesus can do that. The truth is, for too long, I had judged myself

unworthy of God's love. At the time, I didn't love me and I wasn't in the habit of letting God love me either.

Just one week before, I carpooled in a van with the leadership team from church, heading home from the 2009 Vineyard church conference in Duluth, Minnesota. On the drive home, I worked up the nerve to ask them all to pray for me to understand grace. It was particularly hard for me to admit I didn't understand grace because I was one of the worship leaders!

Jesus had now answered my prayer... at a stoplight! I came to learn firsthand that God always responds to humility. God finds humility irresistible. As the Scriptures say, "God resists the proud but gives grace to the humble." (1 Peter 5:5)

At this point in my life, my wife and I had been married for eight years, yet we had no children. My profound lack of understanding of grace and the true nature of God thus far had robbed me of the courage to bring children into the world. I knew I needed to impart a healthy spirituality to my children that, at the time, I knew I didn't possess. Within one week after hearing Jesus' words, my wife and I learned that we were expecting our first child. We named her Elisabeth Grace.

During that season and following, I received many more revelations and supernatural downloads regarding the grace of God. In time, I came to experience even more, the One whom John introduced in his Gospel as "full of *grace* and truth." It turns out, God is better than I think he is. He loves me more than I know. God is committed to making sure that I *will* come to know how loved I truly am.

Jesus is far more worthy of our attention and affection than any of us imagine. The significance of the person of Jesus Christ cannot be overstated. He is the center of the universe in ways beyond any of us can fathom. Jesus' incarnation reveals the true nature of the

One he calls “Father” or “Abba”.¹⁰ Jesus is the fullest revelation and expression of who God is. Jesus is what God has to say about himself.

“The Son radiates God’s own glory and expresses the very character of God.” — Hebrews 1:3 NLT

Love is the glory and character of God! Grace has *everything* to do with **love**!

I had the honor of interviewing a naval aviator named Tony Woody, who became spiritually awakened after a close brush with death when his plane nearly crashed at the age of twenty-four. Two days after his “near-death experience,” he witnessed what he described as an undeniable miracle. He watched a television special about a severely handicapped man who could barely talk or function yet could somehow play the piano like a savant. Right before bed that night, Tony expressed how grateful he was for the miracle he observed in that man’s life and prayed this simple prayer:

“Lord, it sure would be nice if you would do something like that for me someday.”

He promptly fell asleep, and his “someday” happened that very night, and changed his life forever. He woke in the middle of the night to the glory of God filling his room. He said this about his experience:

“I was taken to the throne room of creation and beheld a liquid molten golden white living light of the lotus flower flame of God’s immortal love unfolding and pouring out into the whole universe.

¹⁰ Abba is an Aramaic word for father, used by Jesus and Paul to address God in a relation of personal intimacy.

This blasted through me, filling me up with love, leaving me dumbfounded.”

“I had no idea love could be like this. I clearly knew I was in the Presence of my Creator. You can’t not know that when you are there. Everything of God’s essence was blasting through *me*, making me *One* with it. And then I said three words, “Oh, my Goodness.” The instant I said, “Goodness”, Divine Goodness *exploded* within me... on an infinite scale.”

“These were all emotions coming from God’s heart, expressing to me what God felt about me, *for* me. And I was *so* precious to God... my best analogy about how precious *all* of us are to God as an individual is this:

“Imagine it’s the end of the life of the entire history of the universe. And I was being loved, held, and cradled by every mother, in every galaxy, in every time that ever existed, all at once.”

“And... that analogy actually stinks.”

“It doesn’t come close... at all... and it never will. I can talk like that for billions and billions and billions of years nonstop twenty-four-seven and I still won’t be able to scratch the surface of the truth of God’s love and what it’s like... but, that’s the best I can do.”¹¹

Jesus Christ, whom the Scriptures reveal as the Creator¹² and sustainer of all things, whose Spirit fills all things everywhere,¹³ loves you more than you think he does! As much as you think Jesus loves you, you’re wrong... he loves you more!

¹¹ Tony Woody’s story: <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=zEOFj8Tjt2c>

¹² John 1:3, Colossians 1:16, Hebrews 1:2

¹³ Ephesians 1:23

Let me say it again:

*Jesus loves you
more than you think he does!*

This will *always* be true. This will never *not* be true. Jesus, the incarnation of the Love of the Father, came to reveal the Father's love for each and every one of us. He is *Immanuel* — “God with us” — and, as the Scriptures reveal:

“God is love... in whom we live and move and have our being.”¹⁴

Our role, as “created to be loved” beings, is simply this: to believe God's love and to receive God's love. This is God's desire and prayer for you:

“I pray that... you will be empowered to discover what every holy one experiences—the great magnitude of the astonishing love of Christ in all its dimensions. How deeply intimate and far-reaching is his love! How enduring and inclusive it is! Endless love beyond measurement that transcends our understanding—this extravagant love pours into you until you are filled to overflowing with the fullness of God!” — Ephesians 3:18-19 TPT

We are in an Awakening. We are *all* waking up to Jesus Christ's astonishing, intimate, endless love. This love is intensely personal. *You* are created to be loved. You have been *defined* by love. You *are* defined by love. You will *always* be defined by love.

¹⁴ 1 John 4:16 & Acts 17:28

“I created you to love you” — Jesus

Could it be that your life is designed by a Master Architect of Love whose intentions can be trusted? Could it be that Jesus, the Good Shepherd and Overseer of your soul, has been, and is right now, actively and carefully leading and guiding you toward a richer and fuller experience of his astonishing, intimate, endless love?

As we will explore, Jesus’ love has established you in union with God. This is what it means to be a mystic. True mysticism is the communion of this union with God. *Now* is the time for you to enjoy your friendship and union with God. As God puts it in the good book, “*Now* is the time of God’s favor, *now* is the day of salvation.” This means, as the Lord Jesus has personally told me, “Your wholeness dwells in the *now*.”

Of course, this book is not the “end-all be-all” of capturing what it is to be a mystic. Instead, I intend to focus on the main point of it all:

Intimacy

Intimacy is a feeling of being close, emotionally connected, understood, and supported. Intimacy is deeply knowing someone and also feeling deeply known yourself. Every human heart craves intimacy because we are created in the image and likeness, with the Divine blueprint, of an infinitely intimate Being. You were *made* for intimacy.

I See You

I like to break down the word intimacy as: “into-me-you-see.”

If you have watched the movie *Avatar*, you will recall these three simple words that were infused with such profound weight and meaning: “*I see you.*”

One of God’s names is *El Roi*, “the God who sees me.” God sees you. Jesus sees you. Take a moment right now and envision Jesus looking directly into *your* eyes and hear him say:

“I see you.”

What does this do for you? Do you believe that you are seen, fully known, and fully loved?

Say out loud right now:

“I am seen. I am known. I am loved.”

Say it again.

Spend some time receiving what the Lord wants to reveal to you right now. This is a sacred moment.

Perhaps you have had difficulty believing those words. Know that Jesus has taken care of any barriers to experiencing deep intimacy with Him. You are seen in all of your most faithless, darkest, shameful areas of your heart, and you are loved.¹⁵ It is this kind of love that truly *heals* all of our faithlessness, darkness, and most of all, shame. In truth, it is within Christ’s love that you find *all* the healing you will *ever* need.

His love covers *ALL* the multitude of your sin (1 Peter 4:8). His mercy triumphs over *all* judgment (James 2:13).

Jesus’ love brings you right into *His* perfect peace as he says to you:

¹⁵ Credit: Cally Peterson, from her sermon at Elevation Church, Green Bay

"My peace, I give to you."¹⁶ — Jesus

Do you receive his peace? *Yes, your response matters.*

Isaiah wrote that we will be kept in perfect peace as we trust God (Isaiah 26:3). In the Hebrew language, "perfect peace" is "shalom shalom." This speaks of our absolute completeness and wholeness and sense of well-being. The apostle Paul declares:

"So you also are complete through your union with Christ."
(Colossians 2:10 NLT)

You are complete. You are whole. Today is the day of your salvation. Your wholeness dwells in this *now* moment. We need to ponder this. It would be a mistake to miss the significance and profundity of this moment. Don't you think?

You are complete in your union, your Oneness, with Christ. Say it with me: "I am complete through my union with Christ."

It is life-giving to speak the words of God over ourselves, building ourselves up in this most holy faith... in *his* most holy faith.

A life-changing moment happened for me when I read what Paul wrote about Christ Jesus when he said, "Everything was created through him and for him." (Colossians 1:16 NLT)

I saw *myself* in that verse. *I* was made *by* Jesus and *for* Jesus, to be *loved* by Jesus and to be *one* with Jesus. I saw quite clearly that my life would never have purpose or meaning apart from connection with, and relationship to, my Creator, this God who created me for himself... Jesus Christ. This is the purpose and meaning of life! I found meaning and purpose in belonging to

¹⁶ John 14:27

Jesus. I am his and he is mine. *He* is my Beloved... and I am his.
(Song of Solomon 2:16)

WE are ONE.

Jesus, in John 14:20, confirms his purpose of establishing us all in Divine Oneness:

“On that day you will know that I *am* in My Father, and you *are* in Me, and I in you.” (John 14:20 NASB)

Oneness, restored union, has always been the pinnacle of Jesus’ message and mission. To restore all of humanity into the intimacy he created us for. And Jesus will never give up. He will never relent in his pursuit of us. He is the Good Shepherd who searches for every lost sheep *until* he finds them.

Let’s make it personal. He will never give up his pursuit of you until he finds you.¹⁷ His love never gives up on you. His love never fails you (1 Corinthians 13:8). He will *never* give up on you!

Encountering Jesus

This book is filled with encounters with Jesus. In the pages that follow, you will read many stories of extraordinary people who have encountered Jesus Christ in a remarkable way. I want to emphasize the truth that there is no such thing as an ordinary person, and there is never an unremarkable encounter with Jesus Christ.

This is not a book about the mystics of the past, but of the *seemingly* ordinary mystics you might meet anywhere around the world. Nearly every one of these accounts is from people with whom I’ve had conversations on my podcast. Some people might think the kind of encounters with Jesus described in this book are

¹⁷ Read Luke 15

rare. In truth, I have found that the more you simply talk with people about encountering Jesus, the more stories surface.

I once had a conversation with a brother who sought an encounter with Jesus. He wanted to see Jesus for himself. Holy Spirit led him to his encounter outside a shop in Europe while on a missionary trip. He saw a man who looked at him and smiled. The man's face had been marred by disease. He noticed that many of his teeth were missing or rotting. Despite his off-putting physical appearance, he unmistakably saw Jesus in this man's face and knew that God had just answered his prayer. Jesus revealed to this brother that he lives in us and most often associates himself with the humble of the world, with those who are often overlooked or even despised by society.

Jesus said, "I tell you the truth, when you did it to one of the least of these my brothers and sisters, you were doing it to me!" — Matthew 25:40 NLT

I once asked Paul Young, author of *The Shack*, about his most powerful encounter with Jesus. He told me of a time he visited a man on death row. He encountered Jesus in this condemned man when the man sang *Amazing Grace*.

I think it would be most helpful to embrace the idea that we encounter Jesus in the face of every other human being. We need to start here. To be truly awakened is to act upon this truth and treat the Jesus in others with kindness, love, and respect as you would King Jesus himself. May we honor and celebrate each and every unique expression of Jesus in the people we meet and interact with on a daily basis.

I want to emphasize this from the outset in order to spare you from the obsession and trap of trying *only* to experience Jesus in some mystical way, as if Jesus must make a long, harrowing

journey from a distant heaven to visit us (Or whatever it is that we imagine). May we never forget that we interact with Jesus daily. We pass him on the street, or in a store, or within our own family day after day. But... he is even closer than that.

Remember this vital truth: Christ is in you!

“Christ in you, the hope of glory...When Christ, who is our life, is revealed, then you also will be revealed with Him in glory.” — Colossians 1:27; 3:4 NASB

If you want to see Jesus, look in the mirror. Why would we think that Jesus is out *there* somewhere... but what does the Scripture say?

“His purpose was for the nations to seek after God and perhaps feel their way toward him and find him—though he is not far from any one of us.” (Acts 17:27 NLT)

God is not far from any one of us because God is within us. He is closer than your very breath. Closer than the beating of your heart. Christ is at your very core. He *is* your life. He is your light. He is your love.

Yes, while this book relates encounters that *seem* as if Jesus visits us from a distant heaven, the truth is that he is always with you and in you. Jesus told us the truth when he said, “the kingdom of God is within you” (Luke 17:21). To find the King of heaven, we need look no farther than within our very own being. Jesus has personally said to me, “I am intrinsic to you. You are intrinsic to me.” This is a rich truth I encourage you to explore with him.

If I didn’t emphasize these points right from the start, I feel that this book would be a lie. It might leave someone with the wrong impression that in some way belittles or negates the real

relationship that many have with Jesus, even though, in this lifetime, they may never “see him face to face” in some fantastical vision like the ways described in this book.

As you read the following accounts of people encountering Jesus, I want to encourage you to guard against envy. Please don’t think, “Why them and not me?” Holy Spirit reveals that we are part of the same body, so if something happens to any one of us, in some mysterious way, it happens to *all* of us.

“Whatever happens to one member happens to all. If one suffers, everyone suffers. If one is honored, everyone rejoices.” — 1 Corinthians 12:26 TPT

Is it possible for us to enter into another’s encounter and vicariously enjoy their experience as our own with joy and gratitude? I believe this is the mature response. We will all soon enough realize the truth of our Mystic Oneness with our brothers and sisters in Christ. To envy or regard one another with jealousy is to subtly deny our Oneness.

In my own experience, as I have honored another brother or sister’s encounter with Jesus or experience of God, not only will I enter into their experience, like being immersed in a good novel, but I will also often then have a similar encounter of my own. Do you want to encounter Jesus yourself?

Me too!

“Ask *and* keep on asking and it will be given to you; seek *and* keep on seeking and you will find; knock *and* keep on knocking and the door will be opened to you.” — Jesus, Matthew 7:7 Amp

Ask, seek, and knock with perseverance, and you are *guaranteed* to receive what you seek. Persistence is the key in our pursuit of

God for, “God rewards those who diligently seek him.” (Hebrews 11:6) Our persistence creates within us the capacity to receive and house the many revelations and gifts, and most of all—*Presence*, that God is not just willing, but eager to reveal to us and freely give us. As Jesus said, it is our Father’s good pleasure to give us the kingdom. He has already done so by giving us the King!

“For God so loved the world that he gave us his only begotten Son.” (John 3:16) And, “Unto us a child is born. Unto us a son is given, and the government will rest on his shoulders.” (Isaiah 9:6)

God gave me a dream about the Awakening breaking out all over the world. In my dream, I saw the earth from a distance and a person represented by a flame, lit up with the glory of God and the love of Jesus, on board a plane that flew across the Atlantic. As they landed in a city in Europe, I watched as the flame spread. The city awakened.

America then filled my vision. My gaze focused on the Midwest and the Eastern part of the country. The flames sparked up and spread everywhere, with some regions glowing with more intensity than others. I became aware that this was happening everywhere!

“I have come to set the earth on fire. And how I long for every heart to be already ablaze with this fiery passion for God!” — Jesus, Luke 12:49 TPT

This is the fire that Jesus longs to see kindled on the earth! *This* is what heaven has been working toward all this time! The “kingdom” is any and every one who possesses an intimate relationship with the King.

The kingdom of God is advancing. The leaven of Christ’s

kingdom of love is permeating the dough of this earth (Matthew 13:33). The Rock, who is Christ, is replacing all the kingdoms of this earth and will become a mountain that fills the whole earth (Daniel 2:35). The Scriptures are true. Of the increase of his government and peace, there shall be no end! (Isaiah 9:7)

New Wineskins for New Wine

This book will no doubt be an encouraging companion to you on your journey toward a closer relationship with Jesus as you read about many people's encounters with Jesus. In the coming chapters, we will explore many encounters with Jesus, visions, and dreams from God. There will likely be something or another along the way that's going to stretch your faith. How flexible are you? Jesus explained our need for flexibility in this way:

"No one puts new wine into old wineskins. For the wine would burst the wineskins, and the wine and the skins would both be lost. New wine calls for new wineskins." —

Mark 2:22 NLT 

New wineskins stretch as the wine ages, so they won't burst and the precious wine won't be lost. What is this "new wine"? I believe this speaks of revelation from and of God, his love, his grace, and so much more. This is the revealing of "Christ in you," which is the spirit of prophecy. "For the essence of prophecy is to give a clear witness for Jesus." (Revelation 19:10 NLT)

Incidentally, "An apocalypse is a revelation: seeing something which has been hidden. It comes from the Greek word, Apokálypsis, which means "lifting of the veil", or finding out something secret. Often this secret is discovered in a dream or a vision." (Source: www.wikipedia.org)

What is God highlighting in this Great Awakening? What are the various man-made dogmas of his church that Jesus is correcting in this Re-formation? Revelation will come to you by the gift of the Anointing that teaches each and every one of us. What is this Anointing? It is the Spirit of Truth who leads us into *all* truth. The Scriptures reveal that you, as a believer, have this Anointing (1 John 2:27).

Jesus said to his disciples:

“There is so much more I would like to say to you, but it’s more than you can grasp at this moment. But when the truth-giving Spirit comes, he will unveil the reality of every truth within you.” — John 16:12-13 TPT

There is a phrase that Jesus said to Nicodemus that captures my imagination:

“If you don’t believe me when I tell you about earthly things, how can you possibly believe if I tell you about heavenly things?” — John 3:12 NLT

This reminds me of a scene from the Ben Stiller movie, *Night at the Museum 2*, where he tells a security guard named Brundon, “I’ve seen things you cannot imagine.” Brundon’s response reflects my own wide-eyed childlike response to Jesus’ words about “heavenly things”:

“Like what kind of things?”

My imagination is stirred. Isn’t yours? Curiosity is the proper response for any child of God. Jesus delights in our childlike response to the Mystery of God. Jesus longs to reveal Himself, to reveal the Father, disclosing all the mysteries of heaven to those

who are willing to receive.

So I ask you... Are you willing to be a new wineskin? Jesus obviously isn't inviting you into deception. We are out of our minds if we think we can sincerely ask God for Holy Spirit and end up with an evil spirit instead. Jesus put it this way:

"Now suppose one of you fathers is asked by his son for a fish; he will not give him a snake instead of a fish, will he? Or *if* he is asked for an egg, he will not give him a scorpion, will he? If you then, being evil, know how to give good gifts to your children, how much more will *your* heavenly Father give the Holy Spirit to those who ask Him?" (Luke 11:11-13 NASB)

Your Father is Good. In this passage, Jesus highlights, draws attention to, and teaches us what the best gift your Heavenly Father can possibly give you, his child. Your Father is Good. Of course He desires to bless you with the best gift imaginable! And what is the best gift he could possibly give you? His Presence! The **fullness** of God, in you, by God's Holy Spirit!¹⁸ God gives you Himself!¹⁹

Jesus is your *Good* Shepherd and has proved his love and trustworthiness when he gave his life for you. He is the Shepherd and Overseer of your soul, and you are in his care. Jesus would never dream of throwing his sheep to the wolves. You can trust

¹⁸ Jesus once told me, "Preach the fullness and you shall have it."

¹⁹ On January 23rd, 2025 at 11:38 a.m. Jesus said to me:

"Which one of your experiences of me was a lie?

Come on!

Let's extract the precious from the vile!"

None of them, Lord. I asked for a fish.

"Exactly... That is all for now."

him. Jesus is inviting you into the wild freedom of life in the Spirit.

“This resurrection life you received from God is not a timid, grave-tending life. It’s adventurously expectant, greeting God with a childlike “What’s next, Papa?” God’s Spirit touches our spirits and confirms who we really are. We know who he is, and we know who we are: Father and children. And we know we are going to get what’s coming to us—an unbelievable inheritance! We go through exactly what Christ goes through. If we go through the hard times with him, then we’re certainly going to go through the good times with him.” (Romans 8:15-17 MSG)

So, I ask you: Are you ready for the good times?

ACTIVATION:

The Scripture encourages us to “look away from the natural realm and fasten our gaze onto Jesus who birthed faith within us and who leads us forward into faith’s perfection.” (Hebrews 12:2 TPT)

Take some time right now and invite Jesus to reveal Himself to you. Do as the Scriptures encourage us to do right now and “... approach the throne of grace with confidence, so that we may receive mercy and find grace for help at the time of our need.” (Hebrews 4:16 NIV)

Come **BOLDLY** right now before Jesus’ throne of his favor for *you* and ask him what he has for you.

Pray with me:

Jesus, I want to experience you. I want to know you. I desire to experience the Father's heart. Thank you for creating me to love me. I receive Your love. Thank you for giving me your peace. I receive Your peace. Thank you for "seeing" me and desiring a relationship with me. Expand my heart to receive more of you. I ask to be "under the influence" of the intoxicating wine of the love of God my Savior — the astonishing, intimate, endless love of Jesus Christ... What's next, Papa?

*"Your name engraved upon his hands,
He looks at you and smiles,
You're created to be loved and to be known,
So rest your head, relax into,
the comfort of his eyes,
He is your assurance that you are welcome home."
— lyrics by Daniel Lovett, "Yes, You Are The One!"*

"The One who knows you best, loves you most." - David Good

Jesus Encounter

Chapter Two

There was a time when I imagined God as demanding and strict, cold and distant, and impossible to please. And then, I read a phrase from a verse in Jeremiah that became indelibly etched upon my mind. In this verse, God encourages us to:

*"Give up this mistaken tone of distrust and despair."
(Jeremiah 15:19 AMP)*

I hope and pray that we are *all* able to shed our mistaken tone of distrust and despair (the two seem to be connected), and that we come to fully trust and appreciate our Papa God, who is a loving, devoted, and engaged Father. Are you ready to experience God as your dearest friend who is joyful, fun-loving, and adventurous?

The following encounter with Jesus propelled my journey further down the road of discovering that God is better than I

could ever imagine. Every encounter with Jesus, whether big or small, has a way of realigning us with the beautiful reality of who God *truly* is.

As a young man of twenty-one, I served full-time on staff at a mission organization called Gospel for Asia. I had worked in the home office in Carrollton, Texas, for the past nine months. They trusted me with the keys of a teal Nissan truck in which I made pickups and deliveries all over the Dallas-Fort Worth metroplex. I also worked in the mailroom and answered phones. I enjoyed that season of life, but something troubling brewed just beneath the surface.

You see, I had not healed from the trauma of my parents' divorce. Still a teenager at the time of their divorce, I had a front row seat to the carnage. When my parents announced they were divorcing, it felt like the very fabric of the universe tore apart... and it did. I have since come to see that the fabric of the universe *is* love and faithfulness.

The loss of family shook me to the core. Some traumatic things occurred at that time that, in retrospect, caused me to shut down and reject myself. I attempted to wall off my heart to any future pain. This was not the first or the last time that I "dealt with" pain in this manner. This caused a massive disconnect with God within me. It proved difficult for me to believe God loved me since I hated and rejected myself *so* much. I had trust issues, to say the least.

Though I was God's "employee," I didn't really know him. Most of the time, I walked through life with insecurity, a religious anxiety, and a nagging existential angst... to put it mildly. If you recall the story of *The Shack* by Paul Young, I could relate to Mack *before* encountering Papa. Yes, the Great Sadness was already part of my daily life. And, though often surrounded by other "believers", I felt isolated and alone.

I had no one to confide in and no one to help me through the

issues every young man faces. The worst part about it all is that I felt so disconnected from this God I tried so hard to serve and to please. I was at the end of my rope and feeling the burn around my neck.

On the afternoon of February 15th, 1998, I was driving home after a concert at a nursing home. I felt so desperate that I just knew I couldn't go home. So instead, I drove to my church, Calvary Chapel in Dallas, and parked in the empty lot. As I sat there, all of my anguish and frustration boiled to the surface. I hit and shook the steering wheel and screamed, "God, please help me!"

Though the lot was empty, I decided to walk to the church anyway. I needed to talk to someone. I knocked loudly and waited, not expecting anyone to come, but then, someone did. A man I knew from a Bible study, whom I felt I could trust, came to the door.

He invited me in, and we sat down and talked. I told him about all the things I was feeling and struggling with, and about how desperate and depressed I felt. He encouraged me with a Scripture in John chapter three about how those who come to the light are those who love the truth, while those who hate the truth avoid the light. He said, "Daniel, you are coming to the light. This is good." And then, he prayed for me. Honestly, I didn't feel any better at the time. I left still feeling depressed.

Later that night, as I lay in bed, I began praying. I prayed for a neighbor girl and a few others. I thought about praying in tongues. I had heard about praying in tongues and even tried it a time or two, but I was never fully convinced that I "had the gift". I tried it anyway and wondered if what came out of my mouth was actually a language or if I was making it up.

As I "prayed in tongues," something amazing and miraculous

began to overtake me. The praying in tongues suddenly grew more articulate and intense and forceful, and soon became so loud that I thought for sure I would wake my mom and brothers. I knew this was real!

And then, a most awesome thing happened! The Lord Jesus' glorious Presence came right through the wall and into my room! Brimming and radiating with effervescent glory and holiness, the very Being of Jesus had entered *my* room! All my burdens lifted in a moment as Perfect Peace enveloped me.

The Lord's Presence, the anointing of the Holy Spirit, coursed through my body, starting at the top of my head and moving to my toes and then back again. I would describe it as a whole body energy scan. Every cell in my body did a happy dance as Jesus worked his magic. It felt like he anointed me with liquid love. In that moment, Jesus commissioned me and gave me my calling:

"Daniel, I have called you to proclaim my Name."

When Jesus told me telepathically that I would "proclaim his Name", his words carried with them a download of the depth of meaning and understanding. I recalled Psalm 22, which speaks of the Son of God's purpose and calling:

"I will proclaim your name to my brothers and sisters. I will praise you among your assembled people." — Psalm 22:22
NLT

Jesus commissioned me in that moment to convey his essence and nature, his heart and character, to others. I would represent Jesus and show others what he is truly like. I understood in that moment that to "proclaim his Name" is to represent God's glory, to carry God's aura. Living in it... Moving in it... Breathing His Presence in and out to the world.

It's hard to explain, but I knew that His Name *is* His Presence and that my calling is to share His Name, His Presence, and most of all, His Love, with others. He made me aware that people would come to know who the real Jesus is through me.

Jesus then showed me that the next day I would go to a certain building to make a delivery. He gave me a vision of a man standing outside that building, leaning against the wall, smoking a cigarette. Jesus told me to give this man a simple message: "Tell him that I love him".

As the visceral manifest Presence of Jesus receded, what seemed like my normal, sad state of my self-consciousness crashed back upon me like the Red Sea on Pharaoh's army. I had the spiritual perception then to realize what it truly was — a plethora of evil spirits. When Jesus came into the room, every evil spirit had been pushed back to a perimeter they could not cross as Jesus and I had this meeting. They had been waiting and anticipating the moment he would leave to return to their task of harassing me. Now, they were back.

"Oh no, not you again," I moaned.

Despite of all that, I still went to bed that night with a huge smile on my face and my heart swelling with joy.

The following day, my heart glowed with the memory of my encounter with Jesus. I didn't remember what God had told me about the building, the man, or the message I was to deliver, that is, until I arrived at the building later that day. I had never been to this particular building before, but as I drove into the parking lot, I instantly recognized it as the vision suddenly flooded back into my mind.

My heart began to pound in my chest. 'Will he be there?' I wondered. 'If he is here, I will do it,' I promised myself. I parked the truck and approached the building, both excited and nervous.

Sure enough, the man from my vision stood there leaning against the wall, smoking a cigarette just as the Lord had shown me. I walked up to him and asked his name. I said to Jacob, "You will probably think I'm crazy, but I am a Christian, and last night God came to me and told me to tell you that He loves you."

Jacob seemed to take it seriously, and I truly do hope it made a difference in his life. I walked away, marveling at this new reality I had just stepped into.

Hitchhiking Adventure With God

Later that same day, my best friends Rob and Katie McCall, a couple I really admired from Gospel for Asia, invited me to join several of them for a road trip to New Orleans to share Jesus with people on the streets at Mardi Gras.

'Wow!' I thought. "Yes! Of course I will go!" I told them.

At worship practice that night, I shared the news of my upcoming adventure with Rich, an older brother in Christ that I served with on the worship team at Calvary Chapel.

The next day at the office, Rob approached me and informed me that the plans had fallen through for the trip to New Orleans. Immediately after he told me this, I heard the Lord whisper to me, "But I have called you to go."

Excitement gripped my heart! I didn't know how I would get there, but I knew that, in a week or so, I would be in New Orleans. So help me God!

During that week, I enjoyed some really wonderful times and sweet fellowship with the Lord. The day before I would leave on my adventure, I was back at worship practice again. By this time, the Lord had informed me that I would hitchhike. Without explanation, I told the worship leader that I wouldn't be playing that Sunday. Rich, still assuming I would be traveling with my

friends, took me aside and prayed for me and for God's anointing and blessing on my journey.

So, instead of participating in the worship practice, I found a space in the church to be alone with God. I read for a while from the book of Acts and talked with God. It was then that the Lord told me to leave the next morning at four. I told him, "Lord, if you wake me up at four in the morning, I will go." I did *not* set an alarm that night.

My mom woke me the next morning with the sun pouring through the window. 'It is clearly *not* four in the morning', I thought. She informed me that she would be attending a bible study at church that morning. Our church was located across town and would serve as a much better place to start hitchhiking from. I foolishly told her of my plan and that I still felt the Lord wanted me to go, and asked for a ride to church. She told me, "No, God has closed that door. You can just pray from here if you feel that strongly about it." And then, she left.

That took the wind out of my sails. I sat there in my room, not knowing what to do next. I looked over at my alarm clock, blinking the time:

3:45

Apparently, at some time in the night, the power had gone out and the clock had started over! Oh my goodness, fifteen minutes to go!

I looked in the mirror after brushing my teeth, and I knew I couldn't face myself in a mirror again if I did not join the Lord on this adventure. So I picked up my New King James New Testament and flipped through it looking for some encouragement. I finally stumbled on a verse that simply said, "You are Christ's" (1

Corinthians 3:23).

This was all the encouragement I needed. If I belong to Christ, then he has the right to do whatever he pleases with what is his. Even if this means he would send me on dangerous missions to dangerous places... all alone. But I wouldn't be alone, would I? Christ Jesus is always with me!

The clock now blinked:

3:55

I wrote a hurried note to my mom that read, "Where God closes a door, he opens a window." I then took my bible, a map, an apple, and all my money (all eleven dollars) and, to avoid questions from my brothers in the living room, I left through the window  ... *to be continued...*



Looking back over my story a few decades later, I recall how driven I was to please God and have him “use” me. I believed that my worth, my value to the Lord, depended on how useful of a tool I could be. I couldn’t believe that God approved of me, or loved me, unless I performed well enough to please him. This only led to *much* more trouble later, since it took me many more years to come to see that God doesn’t “use” anyone. God isn’t interested in “using” us. Would any loving father want to “use” their children? Does a father need a baby to do something useful to earn their love? Are parents not pleased with their children until they are of an age to be useful?

What if God our Father is *already* pleased? What if there is nothing to earn? What if our starting point is the same as Jesus’

when, even before he began his ministry, before he did anything “significant” in the world’s eyes, Father said, “You are my Son, whom I love, with you I am well pleased”? (Mark 1:11 NIV)

Instead of starting from a place of lack, I believe that God affirms us as his beloved sons and daughters. Once rooted firmly in that love, God will invite us to participate with him in the “work” of the kingdom for our mutual joy. The work is going to feel like rest and play if we are doing it right. That’s been my experience.

I am reminded of a time when I had just finished up a morning concert at a nursing home. The Lord suggested that I drop in to another facility that I had not planned on, to visit with the folks and share a few songs.

“I’m pretty tired, God. I think I just want to go home.” I protested.

God spoke to my heart, “Okay, son, you can do whatever you like.”

There was no trace of judgment or shame. I was *completely* off the hook. In that moment, I could relate to something my friend Florian Berndt has said:

“Raise the dead or take a nap. You are loved just the same.”

As I started to drive home, I began to wonder, ‘What would happen if I did go? What blessing is in store for me or others?’

I took a U-turn.

It turned out to be a joy-filled and encouraging experience for all... especially me.

Prayer:

God, thank you for meeting us in our desperate places. Thank you for being a devoted and engaged Father and friend who is joyful, fun-loving,

and adventurous. Thank you for establishing us in rest and in your love before inviting us into the joy of partnering with you in serving others.

Thank you that to “do the work that God requires,” according to Jesus, is to simply trust you. We trust you, Jesus. We trust you, Father. We trust in the love you have for us. Teach us all the more to rest and abide in your love.

Daniel Lovett serves full-time as a ‘musicianary’ to nursing homes and hosts a podcast called Sozo Talk Radio. You can find him on YouTube at “The Mystic One”. His music can be found at www.reflectworship.com or www.reflect.bandcamp.com.

Join the Christian Mystic Facebook community page @ www.facebook.com/themysticalchristian. Daniel’s blog can be found at: www.daniellovett.com.

“Those who truly love me are those who obey my commands. Whoever passionately loves me will be passionately loved by my Father. And I will passionately love you in return and will manifest my life within you.” — John 14:21 TPT

“And now you must repent and turn back to God so that your sins will be removed, and so that times of refreshing will stream from the Lord’s presence. And he will send you Jesus, the Messiah, the chosen one for you. For he must remain in heaven until the restoration of all things” — Acts 3:19-21 TPT

Divine Visitation

Chapter Three

Jesus commissioned Brian Simmons to the work of translating the Scriptures in a beautiful, unique way in *The Passion Translation*. Brian is both sensitive and obedient to Holy Spirit, which has led many people to encounter Jesus Christ for themselves. I believe Brian Simmons to be a key player in this Great Awakening. Reach out and connect with him for inspiring Bible studies and more at his website, Passion and Fire at: www.passionandfire.com.

After reading some of *The Passion Translation*, I reached out to Brian. I have since interviewed him several times on my YouTube channel. In one of these interviews, we discuss his visit to the library of heaven, where he was given two books to help him in his translating work. While there, in this library in heaven, angels informed him of the soon coming Great Awakening, which was

shown to him through a metaphor of John chapter 22. In another interview, we discussed how Brian participated with the Lord on a trip to India to raise a young boy back from the dead!

The following is a transcript of a portion of my interview in Brian's own words:

It was 1971. I was a drug addicted young man facing problems on my right and left. During that season in my life, I came to know gloriously the Lord Jesus Christ. He didn't appear to me, but within my heart the strange warming of faith grew, and I knew that Jesus was real and calling my name and bringing me to himself. So began the journey.

My wife and I were career missionaries in the jungle of Central and South America with the Piacuna people. While there, I was a church planter and, as a linguist, I helped finalize the alphabet with a Wycliffe translator. I helped with the translation project of the Bible into the Piacuna language and saw it completed.

I was, at that time, not even theologically believing that God would appear or speak. For me to hear God would be reading the Bible. And of course, that's where we hear God's voice, and nothing will ever contradict the Word of God, but when God speaks, it can often contradict our opinion of the Word of God.

Jesus audibly spoke to me and commissioned my wife and I to return to the United States. He said, "I am calling you back to North America. I am going to send revival to the nations, and you are going to be a part of it."

After our return to the States, the village we had served at was overrun with people with automatic weapons. They kidnapped the missionary men that I put in place, and then they killed them. My best friends are martyrs.

So now we were back in the U.S., pastoring in New England for eighteen years. God spoke to me again, not audibly, but he speaks

to me inwardly, and told me to turn the church over. So we did that and gave it to a younger leadership team. Then I prayed, “Lord, what do you want me to do?”

I had a Divine visitation in the middle of the night where the One that I love walked through my wall and woke me. He breathed on me. It felt like a kiss from heaven. It felt like heaven’s wind, the Ruach, the breath of God, came upon me. When he breathed on me, I felt downloads of revelation coming instantly. I received a better connection to both hear him better and to understand the Scriptures. He said, “I am calling you to do this translation project. I am commissioning you.” He promised he would help me and that he would give me secrets.

For some reason, that seems to bother people, that God has secrets that he will give to his people. But the Scripture says that, “the secret of the Lord is with those who fear him.”²⁰ And I fear God, and I love Him.

Jesus also promised that I would have persecution that would be commensurate with the notoriety of *The Passion Translation*. In other words, the more it’s known, the more there would be opposition to it. He prepared me for that and told me that he would help me in every way.

That was one of the few times I have seen the glory of the Lord Jesus. The blinding, radiant beauty of the Lord Jesus that always changes you. You will never be the same person.

Jesus is appearing to people all over the world. Don’t think it strange that Jesus, who appeared to his disciples after his resurrection, who also appeared to Saul of Tarsus on his way to Damascus, even after his ascension, is even now appearing and has throughout church history.

Jesus appears; he manifests. He is the man of both realms. He is

²⁰ Psalm 25:14

human and Divine, so he enters into this world, and he comes like he did to Abraham. He will come to his servants.

Now he comes to Muslim Imams. I know of many stories in the Muslim faith where Isa, Jesus, is appearing. The man in white is coming to Muslims. He has appeared to people who are involved with what's known as the New Age movement. He comes as the man of light. He brings them into faith and out of what they thought was real into what is really Real. And Jesus is doing the same with his followers.

That's not to say that if you haven't had Jesus come to you, then you are second-rate. No, and it doesn't mean that the ones that he has come to are any better than anyone else. But Jesus is on a mission to change the world. He has a strategy and a plan. And he has his servants in place, at the right place. Every one of you hearing this right now. You are in the right place for God to partner with you to change the world and for the Lord himself to manifest to you.

So for God to appear to you is not a merit badge or a trophy. He has indeed come, and when he has come to me, it has been so epic, so life-changing. Even my family sees the difference. Those who know me and love me have seen the change that standing before the man of glory will affect on you.

I cannot even imagine the joy of the disciples who walked with him and then, after his resurrection, had so many encounters with him.

Encounters with Jesus are the "miracle grow" in the last days move of God. Never discount the fact that Jesus can come to you, turn it all around, and he can stand before a person and ignite them with flames of glory to change the world forever.

One person can change the world if they've been with Jesus.

To validate whether your experience or my experience was really Jesus, the true Jesus of the Bible, look at the fruit that has

come. Has it made you a better father and husband? I know it will. Has it changed me into a different man? Yes. That encounter has changed me and my ministry forever. The fruit of love is the fruit of the Holy Spirit. The other eight “fruits” are expressions of love. They are love on display. Love at rest, love rejoicing, love under restraint. All of those nine “fruit” of the Spirit are traced back to this mega theme of the love of God.

Encountering the Consuming Fire of God

Another life-changing encounter with Jesus occurred one day as I sat on the edge of my bed, praying. I was in the midst of telling the Lord how much I loved him, how much I wanted him, and how much I wanted to be a pastor who would love others with the love of Christ. I acknowledged my failures in that and my need for the love of God to fuel my love for others.

Suddenly, the wall five feet in front of me melted and, walking through the wall, came a Light so intense and so bright. The beautiful glory of God appeared as a ball of light, and the One I love was inside this light. I had no doubt who this was, and you wouldn’t either if it happened to you. It was so supernaturally pure, holy, and exalting of heaven.

I couldn’t focus my eyes on the light. It was so bright and all I could do was to hide my face. I still felt the light piercing through me.

He breathed on me and gave me a fire that stepped into my heart.

I screamed and I said, “Lord, help me! Give the grace to endure this!” And for what seemed like twenty minutes, that light just burned through my life. It burned up some things that needed to be burned up. It exposed some things that needed to be exposed. And from that encounter, I became a different person.

I actually got to the point where I had to say, “Lord, you’re going to have to lift this from me. I’m going to die. My wife will come home later and find dust and ashes on the floor and sweep it up, not realizing that it is me.”

I just felt like I was going to be consumed in this fire.

After this, I went to the grocery store to pick up some milk for the family. As I passed through the store, whenever anyone came within a ten or twelve-foot radius around me, they would fall to the floor. I really didn’t know what was happening until I realized that this was the Presence of the One who came to my room just minutes before. His Presence was clinging to me. His Presence was on me that day.

I then remembered that I had to speak at the chapel for the children at the school at our church. I went to the church and walked into the office. The entire staff just froze and stared at me. One finally said, “What happened to you?” I said, “I’ll tell you later. I have to go speak in chapel.”

As soon as I came into the auditorium of the chapel, every one of the children, about fifty to sixty kids, every one of them fell down under the power of God. They were shaking and crying. Many of them reported seeing angels. Some were being taken up into heavenly visions.

I was undone for months following this encounter, and it affected our church powerfully. The glory of God was so intense that people couldn’t stand. We had many services where people could not get past the atrium to get into the building. They were moved so powerfully. We had people who were knocked to the ground by God’s power. Some could not even get into their cars to drive. They were so stunned by God’s manifest Presence.

I think this was a foretaste of what we are going to see in the nations. We will see the Presence of God increase in such a way that no one will be so foolish as to take the glory for themselves.

No one will be so foolish so as to control it, or use it, or merchandise it. This move will be the steel punch of God coming in Awakening power and Divine glory that rivals anything we see in the Bible. I do believe in a Great, powerful Awakening and Reformation. We will see stadiums filled with Jesus lovers worshiping God, and it won't matter who the preacher or worship leader is. There will be One focus and reason we gather... Jesus!

I have had dreams of this. I have been taken into heaven and shown a measure of what the Lord is planning for *this* generation. This will rock the earth, and television stations will be filming meetings for free. Networks will be broadcasting the miraculous and jaw-dropping manifestations of God's Presence. Evangelists will be back into focus. They will operate in the purity of the likes of Billy Graham and operate in the authority of the apostle Paul.

The glory of heaven is kissing the earth, and there will be a great harvest of souls. The best wine is saved for last.

Prayer:

Jesus, we want you. Just to be with you is our mission. As Scripture reveals, we are created by you and for you. To know you and walk with you, Jesus, is our purpose and our desire. We ask for the fruit of the Holy Spirit — all the ways love manifests — to overflow in our lives as we simply position our hearts to be loved by you. Manifest yourself within us just as you promised and ignite us with flames of glory!

May we host your Presence well. We pray for an encounter with your glory that exposes and purges out all that needs exposing and purging. May your all-consuming refiners' fire burn away all that is not of love's kind from our lives. Let only that which bows to Jesus and serves love remain.

 *Jesus, we pray, we ask, for a baptism of fire. Holy fire of God, come! So be it.*

“For God did not send His Son into the world to condemn the world, but that the world through Him might be saved.”
— John 3:17 NKJV

“There is therefore now no condemnation for those who are in Christ Jesus.” — Romans 8:1 ESV

“What’s up my Dude?”

Chapter Four

Will Stone

I first heard about Will’s encounter with Jesus in a testimony video he made on YouTube. I found it deeply moving. I loved it so much I shared his story with my kids as their bedtime story. For about a year after, my youngest daughter would randomly quote Jesus from Will’s story and say, in the cutest little voice, “What’s up my dude?”

Will and I talk about his encounter, along with many other supernatural stories and miracles that have been a part of his journey, in my interview with him on Sozo Talk Radio. A free spirited traveler and musician, Will loves Jesus with all his heart.

I love the rawness and authenticity that flows from this brother! Enjoy reading Will’s life changing encounter with Jesus in his own words:

I grew up an atheist. I didn’t believe in God. I thought people who went to church were crazy, and I would even try to talk others out of their faith. Not many people talked about God when I was

young. Most of what I heard about God was negative. I went to church a few times, but I didn't like it.

Then one day, something crazy happened. God spoke to me. I was about twenty years old and in college when I heard God say, "I want you to follow me." Somehow, I knew this voice was God, even though I didn't believe in God. I remember saying something really stupid in response. "I've got my own plans. You've got really bad timing, God. I'm in college. I have my own thing going on. Maybe later, but you've got bad timing."

Looking back, that was probably one of the dumbest things I could have ever said. Imagine telling the creator of time they have bad timing! But that's how it went—God spoke, I responded. God did not argue with me. I felt this weight, but I said, "I don't care. I'll carry it. I'm doing my own thing."

The next few years of my life spiraled into destruction. Drinking, partying, drugs, chasing women — the typical college lifestyle. Eventually, it all started wearing me down, and I thought, "I'm destroying myself. This is killing me. None of this is good for me dude."

I could feel the effects of sin in my life. My soul felt like an acid-washed cloth, slowly unraveling, thread by thread. There also were moments when I knew I should've done something good, but I didn't. My heart would be screaming out to do something. But I would freeze, the moment would pass, and then I'd beat myself up over it, thinking, "Man, what's wrong with you? Why didn't you do something?"

I also started questioning life itself: 'What's the purpose of all this? Why do we exist?'

As I began stepping back from the world's ways, I felt like I entered a season of spiritual attack. The devil's voice filled my mind, telling me I was the biggest piece of trash in the universe, and I was doomed forever. I didn't know this then, but the devil is

a liar. The devil continued to pour filth on me. I felt lost and broken. I didn't know up from down.

One day, my sister came to me and said, "I'm getting baptized. If you want to get baptized, you can too."

I told her I'd think about it. I started reading the New Testament. As I read, I liked the story of Jesus. But did Jesus really exist? Was He God in the flesh? Was He the Son of God who came down and died for our sins? I wanted proof, but God requires a leap of faith.

I remembered what God had said to me years earlier, that He wanted me to follow Him. I knew what sin was as I had felt the effects of sin in my life. I decided this would be a start to my journey toward Him and so, I got baptized. Even though I was reaching towards God, I was still on the fence about Jesus. After baptism, the spiritual attacks only intensified. I grew weary of the constant battles.

One night, I reached my breaking point. I went into my room absolutely distraught and prayed the most important prayer of my life.

I prayed, "Jesus, heal my mind. My heart feels like a hundred-ton weight. Heal my heart. Heal my soul. Heal my body. Heal this place."

I prayed this over and over, pouring everything out to Him because I knew I was broken. I sat there in spiritual bankruptcy, a broken sinner. I knew my life was cracked and messed up dude. Grossness had just been poured into this thing.

Then something amazing happened. I noticed something odd happening with the streetlight outside my window, and then, all of a sudden, floating in on a beam of light, was Jesus!

This is where it gets wild, but I just have to tell it like it happened. Jesus floated in through my window, seated in a meditative position, and *BOOM!* Rays of glory! Rays of

awesomeness! Rays of purity! Rays of majesty! Rays of holiness! Emanating from this person. I was in the presence of the Almighty! I was completely stunned!

I thought, “That looks just like Jesus, dude!” I was starstruck. My mouth hung open. In my heart, I said, “You’re Jesus! What are you doing here?” But outwardly, I was frozen in awe.

Then He looked at me and spoke:

“Will! What’s up, my dude?”

Those are His words, not mine. That’s what He said to me. Then, He looked at me. He looks at me and He sees treasure — the greatest treasure that you can imagine! If you could see the greatest treasure, dude, it would make you jump for joy!

His gaze was full of pure love, and it overwhelmed me. If you can see yourself in God’s eyes, seeing the value He created in you —the value He sees in each of us and the love He has for you, it will change your life!

You were made to be wonderful and accomplish your purpose in awesomeness! He wonderfully made you. And man, as his love was pouring over me, it was the greatest feeling in the world!

Oh my goodness dude, it was like, I don’t even know what to compare it to. It was like a good father looking at his child. His love was pouring over me, it was the greatest feeling in the world! It was so healing.

Then He started showing me other things, with *action*. Without speaking, He flew quickly around the room. In my mind He was the kung fu Master! He demonstrated how He tackles problems and solves one problem which allows Him to solve another and another. It was like He was saying, “I’m the ultimate problem solver! I can’t be stopped!”

At this point, I had an impression of an infinite row of Rubik’s

cubes. If you tried to time Jesus solving them, as soon as you hit the stopwatch Jesus would be saying, “Done!”. He could complete the physically impossible! He’s super human! It was mind-blowing!

After that, He floated through the wall, down the street, and disappeared.

He was gone.

I sat there in awe, thinking, “*What just happened?!?*”

It was amazing! It was awesome! I had the biggest smile on my face for a long time. Maybe the biggest smile you’ve ever seen. I laughed in astonishment. After a long time of laughing I didn’t know what to do next. It was night, so I just laid down and went to sleep.

The next morning, I woke up to the most beautiful sunrise 🌞 I’d ever seen—blue skies, birds chirping, and a peace in the air I’d never felt before. It was like there was something in the air and breathing it in was purifying and it felt so good, man. It felt awesome! That day felt like a gift straight from God. It felt like peace on earth. There was peace for me.

There was no going back after that, dude. At first I was thinking, “Maybe I shouldn’t tell people. They’re going to think I’m crazy”. But then I thought, “If something like this happened to someone else, I’d want them to tell me!”

So here I am, sharing my story with you. I can’t hold this. Jesus is alive and real! He showed up! He showed me the greatest things. He is God who came down in the flesh. He can pass through walls. He can float around and travel on light beams and stuff, dude!

He is the most awesome dude that ever lived! He operates in the supernatural!

Everyone should know who Jesus is. Everybody, when they see Him, should be jumping for joy and running towards Him cause they know who He is. He is the most awesome person you could have in your life, dude! Reach out for Him. Try to make contact!

Connect with Will through his Youtube channel here:
www.youtube.com/gospelofwill or on Facebook at:
www.facebook.com/willwhatsupmydude. His music can be found at: www.facebook.com/@youngwillstone.

"The Spirit and the bride say, "Come." Let anyone who hears this say, "Come." Let anyone who is thirsty come. Let anyone who desires drink freely from the water of life." — Revelation 22:17 NLT

"Give Me Back My Stuff!"

Chapter Five

Graham Cooke is an international speaker and mentor to many pastors and churches. He has authored over twenty inspirational books about our identity and the intimacy we can enjoy with God. Visit Graham's website, www.brilliantperspectives.com to learn more. Take the time to look into his amazing testimonies in some of his books and broadcasts.

How Graham Cooke Met Jesus

An angry young man, running from the law after breaking the terms of his parole, Graham had been hitchhiking for a few days when it began to rain. He sought shelter in a field near the freeway. Graham sensed a presence coming toward him. He clenched his fists ready for a fight. Jesus came alongside Graham, put his arm around him, and whispered, "Tell me everything."

Something in Graham broke, and he began to pour out his heart to Jesus. During this encounter, God supernaturally provided a warm and safe environment for him to enjoy his first contact with his Savior. Graham slept that night under a hedge and woke without a care in the world. He felt like he had just eaten a three-course meal, even though he had not eaten in three days.

Amazingly, the ground was completely dry in a radius around him, while the ground just a few feet away was wet. When Graham stepped beyond an invisible barrier onto the wet grass, he felt hungry and stressed. He stepped back into the ‘sanctuary space’ into fullness, warmth, and lightness of heart. He finally decided he couldn’t live in this field forever and went on his way.

Later, after meeting up with his friend, he told of his experience. His friend said, “I think you met Jesus”. Graham burst into tears at the mention of his name. This was the first time he had cried since he was three years old.²¹

Graham has since enjoyed a life filled with encounters with Jesus. He encounters Jesus during dreams or visions and experiences the realities of heaven. The following is an intense and enlightening conversation Graham had with Jesus in a dream recorded in his own words:

I’m in heaven. I find myself standing on top of a grassy hill in this structure that has wooden poles and a privacy curtain and tables with food and wine, where I had met and conversed with Jesus before. On previous occasions, my meetings with Jesus had always been pleasant. Normally, what happens is that he comes up the hill and he’s laughing and smiling, surrounded by people. Kids are trying to jump on him, grannies are dancing all around him, and he’s having a dozen conversations at once. Usually, he looks up, smiles, and waves 🙌, and says, “I’ll be there in a minute.”

On this occasion, however, Jesus is by himself, marching up the hill, and he looks annoyed. He looks like he just swallowed a wasp. He’s marching up the hill. He’s glaring at me, and the closer that he gets, I start moving back until I start to feel the curtain at

²¹ Source Graham Cooke Testimony: <https://youtu.be/w7MC69JuH54>

my back. I'm thinking, "I've never seen him like this." And I am worried.

Jesus marches to within four feet of me and demands,
"Graham, give me back my stuff!"

"Excuse me?"

"Give me back my stuff!"

"I... I... I don't know what you mean, Lord."

"Graham, don't mess around with me. Give me back my stuff!"

I begin to sweat, "But I don't know what you mean."

"Yes, you do! Give me back my stuff! I want it and I want it right now! *RIGHT NOW!* You took some stuff from me that I don't want you to have. Give it back!"

Once more, I am completely confused, and I wrack my brain trying to think of what the Lord could mean. "I don't know what you mean, Lord."

Jesus again says, "Graham, this is the last time. Give me back my stuff!"

At this point, I am on my knees crying and say, "Lord, I don't know what you mean."

Jesus replies, this time with tenderness. "That worry. That anger. That resentment. That bitterness. That fear. I died for it. I paid a price for it. It belongs to me. It doesn't belong to you. Give me back my stuff!"

Suddenly, in that moment, I could see it. I realize that I had been resurrecting all the things that Jesus had taken to the cross and left in the grave. I am utterly appalled, and I confess, "I am so sorry. You're right, Lord. I've been doing that."

And then Jesus smiles at me, which, honestly, felt like getting saved all over again. He reaches down, picks me up, and kisses me on both cheeks. He holds me at arm's length so he can look me in my eyes and says:

“Graham, have you any idea how utterly delighted I was to die for all those things? When I was on the cross, the joy that was set before me was that I knew that I was robbing you of the ability to experience all that negativity. I was taking all those things away from you so that you would never have to experience them or encounter them ever again. I could give you a whole new life where those things would be absolutely absent.”

“You could learn a whole new way of *being*. Do you know how excited I was to be able to take all those things away from you? That you’d never be fearful again. You’d never be anxious or worried or panicked. You never have to be angry, bitter, or resentful. You can be free... Totally, completely free of all negativity.”

“It wasn’t just your sin I took on the cross. I took all your negativity. All your negative way of looking at things that makes you cynical and sarcastic. All your negative way of seeing and thinking. All your negative mindset that makes you imagine the worst, before you even think about seeing the best. That takes you off into the darkness. Into the shadows. Where you imagine the worst.”

“I robbed you of all your negativity so that you could see the best. Think the best. Believe the best. Speak the best. I took all that away from you.”

“And here you are, son. You keep taking it back as if it belongs to you. It doesn’t belong to you. I paid a price for it. It’s mine. Give me back my stuff.”

“All the time you are taking hold of those things, you can’t see who you really are. You can’t become the person that I see when I look at you. All the time you take on all those characteristics, there is a disconnect between you and heaven. I died so that you could stay connected. Son, it’s called abiding, staying, dwelling... remaining in this place.”

“I want my stuff back. Give me back my stuff.”

“Because as long as you are holding onto that, you cannot receive all I have to give you. I can only give in exchange for something. I have things to give you, and we have things to do.”²²

ACTIVATION:

How could we, after hearing a word from Jesus like this, not take a moment to meet with him? This is the most important thing any of us could do right now!

Jesus says, “I could give you a whole new life where negativity would be absolutely absent... Totally completely free of all negativity.”

Come to Jesus right now in the sacred space of your own heart. Ask Jesus, “What are the negative things I am carrying that you desire to free me from today?”

Wait for his reply.

Give to Jesus the things that he reveals to you.

Ask Jesus, “What do you have for me in exchange?” Take the time and talk this over with Jesus. Receive what he has for you.

²² Source “Give me Back My Stuff”: <https://youtu.be/A-dBioGxk0E>

“He said, “Go out, and stand on the mountain before Yahweh.” Behold, Yahweh passed by, and a great and strong wind tore the mountains, and broke in pieces the rocks before Yahweh; but Yahweh was not in the wind. After the wind there was an earthquake; but Yahweh was not in the earthquake. After the earthquake a fire passed; but Yahweh was not in the fire. After the fire, there was a still small voice. When Elijah heard it, he wrapped his face in his mantle, went out, and stood in the entrance of the cave.” — 1 Kings 19:11-13 WEB

“Whether you turn to the right or to the left, your ears will hear a voice behind you, saying, “This is the way; walk in it.”” — Isaiah 30:21 NIV

Listening to Jesus

Chapter Six

Jesus and his three closest friends, Peter, James, and John, journey together up a mountainside to fellowship and commune with God. Suddenly, they witness Jesus’ appearance transform, “so that his face shone like the sun, and his clothes became as white as light”. Moses and Elijah appear and begin to speak with Jesus concerning the details of his approaching exodus from earth. The disciples marvel at what they are witnessing. And then, a most significant moment manifests. A bright cloud envelops them, and Papa’s voice speaks:

“This is my beloved Son, with whom I am well pleased;

listen to Him.” (Matthew 17:5 ESV)

There is nothing more important that we could be doing with the currency of our lives, our time, than to listen to Jesus.

As far as humanity is concerned, Jesus was, is, and forevermore will be — God’s defining Message. This is the One whom John refers to as the unique Son of God. In Jesus, who is the Christ, dwells the fullness of the Godhead in bodily form. (Colossians 2:9) He is the Expression of the Father, the “radiance of God’s glory and the exact representation of his being”. (Hebrews 1:3)

Father counsels us to listen to his Son. *How will we respond?*

Humanity and history can testify to the trauma, suffering, and misery, the horror and heartache, ruin and destruction, bitterness, jadedness, and the black hole of depression, hopelessness, and despair that comes from refusing to listen to Jesus... BUT, what if we *did* listen? What *if*?

Word to the wise... here is what Solomon wrote in Proverbs 1:33:

"But the one who always listens to me will live undisturbed in a heavenly peace. Free from fear, confident and courageous, that one will rest unafraid and sheltered from the storms of life." (TPT)

What does Jesus have to say to us *right now* that could radically alter our lives in the best ways possible? If only we would listen. Don’t you think he would respond with favor *if* we humbled ourselves enough to ask him what is on his mind?

Let’s try it. No time like the present. Let’s ask him right now:

“Jesus, what is on your mind? What do you have to say to me?”

What is Jesus saying to you right now? (*Journal about it!*)

Jesus woke me up this very morning (*circa Fall of 2024*) with this word:

“Daniel, you are in My Fortress of Righteousness, you are in My Castle of Holiness. All your sins are like sandcastles on a beach that is washed away by the tide every evening. My mercies are new every morning.”

His word to me references this Scripture:

"The faithful love of the Lord never ends!

His mercies never cease.

Great is his faithfulness;

His mercies begin afresh each morning." — Lamentations 3:22-23 NLT

My greatest wish for you is that you will come to experience words from Jesus like this on the regular. May your spiritual ears become attuned to hear from Jesus and all that he has to share with you as you practice his presence and give him your rapt²³ attention.

I feel especially loved when people listen to me and give me their full and undivided attention. Don't you? I believe it is not unreasonable to expect that good friends listen well. Do you concur?

²³ Definition of “rapt”: Completely fascinated by what one is seeing or hearing

We show our love for Jesus when we give him our full and undivided attention and simply tune in and listen well. You will soon discover that Jesus is the funniest and most interesting person you'll ever meet. Try asking him to tell you a joke! I've never laughed so hard in my life when I have done so. He shares with me so many interesting things that I could not even journal about them all. I would spend my entire life journaling and writing... and I intend to! I am never bored... except when I stop letting him lead, or when I become ungrateful, or when I fail to trust him, or when I am no longer... listening.

When we listen to Jesus, we come to experience the rich, satisfying, abundant *life* of joy Jesus spoke of in the tenth chapter of the Gospel of John (John 10:10). Here, in this passage of Scripture, Jesus introduces himself as the Good Shepherd who lays down his life for his sheep. Jesus says, "My sheep listen to my voice; I know them, and they follow me. I give them eternal life, and they will never perish. No one can snatch them away from me, for my Father has given them to me, and he is more powerful than anyone else. No one can snatch them from the Father's hand. The Father and I are one." (John 10:27-30 NLT)

I am advocating for us all to take a moment with God right now and settle this issue once and for all. It is as easy as tuning in to his voice and listening. May God grant us *all* this grace: to listen to Jesus. If and when we do so, heaven on earth will manifest.

Robby Dawkins²⁴ shares a story in his book, *Do What Jesus Did*, of a young woman who encountered the Good Shepherd's voice on the way home from a Jesus conference in Atlanta, Georgia.

²⁴ Robby's book, *Do What Jesus Did*, is based on Jesus words in John 14:12 that says believers will do the same works, and even greater works, than Jesus did. My first interview on my podcast, Sozo Talk Radio, was with Robby about raising the dead.

Excited about her renewed and refreshed relationship with Jesus, she told him:

“Lord, I’ll do anything for you. I’ll do *anything*. Just tell me what you want me to do, and I’ll do it.” In that moment, she sensed something and realized, *I’m supposed to turn left*. It almost felt like a whim, but desperately wanting to obey God’s voice, the woman turned left. After driving a little while, she felt as though she was supposed to turn right, so she did. Filled with anticipation, she wondered, *Is God really directing me to do something right now? This is so exciting!*

Before she knew it the woman ended up right in front of a little convenience store, which she sensed was the place the Lord was bringing her. Once inside, she couldn’t wait to see how the Lord would direct her, but the only thing that kept coming to her mind was, *Go over in front of the clerk and stand on your head*.

Pretty weird, right? How many of us would reach that point and say, “Okay, no, that’s not God,” and get in our car and drive home? The direction the woman was sensing seemed odd enough that she could have easily discounted it, although it wasn’t something immoral or unbiblical. She prayed, “Lord, are You sure?” But she felt nothing in response to her prayer. No confirmation.

So many times, that’s the gentleness of the Holy Spirit. He doesn’t force us to do anything. So in that moment, she had a real choice to make.

It took her a little bit to build up the courage, so she hung around in the potato chip aisle until everybody cleared out of the store. Then she walked up to the register and said, “Hey! Look what I can do!” There happened to be a pole right in front of the clerk, so she did a handstand against it. From her upside-down position, she saw him drop his head and shake it. She swung her

legs down and thought, *Man, he thinks I'm crazy — a real freak!* But as she walked up to the clerk, she saw he was actually crying, so she asked, "What's the matter?"

He told her, "About a half hour ago, I was sitting here working, and I prayed, "God, if You're real, have somebody come in here and stand on their head."

This woman listened to and followed Jesus, and two lives are forever impacted, hers and his. But not only that, everyone who hears this story is now left with something beautiful to think about. Is God this personal? Does he see me? Can I partner with him to change another's life for the better? Could I perhaps even save a life?

One day, I was out and about town giving rides through the Uber app. My ride that day was heading to a gun shop. He started asking me about my opinion on guns, asking, "What handgun will get the job done?"

I responded, "Well, you never know when time travelers from the future will suddenly appear and request volunteers to come fight in the future alien invasion. It will be advantageous to be experienced with a gun when that happens." (*I had just watched the very entertaining film, The Tomorrow War.*)

I shared what little I knew about guns and, as we neared the store, I silently prayed what I pray for all my rides: "God, what do you have for this person?"

Holy Spirit led me to share with him about a recent video JP Sears had released. JP has spent years grappling with and exposing the demonic agenda of "the powers that be" and the evils that they perpetuate upon humanity. He said that as he found himself leaning away from evil, he found himself leaning into God.

As soon as I mentioned God, this man lit up and said, "I need

God!"

We continued to talk about God for a few more blocks and, as we pulled up to the gun store, he confessed, "Daniel, I came here tonight to buy a gun to kill myself."

"Well *that's* not going to happen now, is it?" I replied joyfully.

I prayed with him and blessed him right then and there. As I drove him home, I encouraged him to reach out and connect with Jesus, to marinate his mind in God's word, and I invited him to a Christian men's group that I attend on Saturday mornings.

As we parted ways he said, "Thank you, Daniel. You saved my life."²⁵

Jesus modeled a *Way of Life* of listening to and following God, his Father. He once said that he only spoke what the Father gave him to say, and he only did what the Father showed him to do. Because he tuned in and listened to and obeyed the Father, the world is forever changed. We follow in Christ's example when we tune into, listen to, and obey God. As the Scriptures say, "Those who say they live in God should live their lives as Jesus did." (1 John 2:6 NLT)

Jesus lived his life trusting his Father and obeying his Father. Why would we not want to trust and obey every impulse of our Father who is Perfect Love?

Meditation Scripture

The LORD (who is Perfect Love) has given us warnings in Scripture for those who refuse or fail to listen, and some precious promises for those who do.

²⁵ My friend Anthony from Elevation Church just told me of a similar story of how he was given a specific word from Jesus that saved a woman's life!

Proverbs 2:1-8 The Passion Translation

“My child, will you treasure my wisdom?
Then, and only then, will you acquire it.
And only if you accept my advice
and hide it within will you succeed.
So train your heart to listen when I speak
and open your spirit wide to expand your discernment—
then pass it on to your sons and daughters.
Yes, cry out for comprehension and intercede for insight.
For if you keep seeking it like a man would seek
for sterling silver,
searching in hidden places for cherished treasure,
then you will discover the fear of the Lord
and find the true knowledge of God.
Wisdom is a gift from a generous God,
and every word he speaks is full of revelation
and becomes a fountain of understanding within you.
For the Lord has a hidden storehouse of wisdom
made accessible to his godly ones...”

So train your heart to listen and become wise! God rewards those who diligently seek him with the secrets of his heart. This is not fast food spirituality. If you were to keep reading Proverbs 2, the passage goes on to deliver even more promises to those dedicated to listening. God promises to become your personal bodyguard. Actively listening means to read, study, pray into, pursue, and attend to his word as if your life depends on it... because it does.

What are you left with if you reject his life-giving words?
May we never become those described in Scripture who would

be so foolish as to neglect so great a salvation (Hebrews 2:3), or, be among those who condemn themselves by rejecting the Gospel, as Paul's Jewish listeners did, considering themselves unworthy of eternal life (Acts 13:46).

ACTIVATION:

Take some time right now to reach out to and connect with Jesus. You might find yourself apologizing for neglecting him. You might find yourself renewing your commitment to *listen*. On the other hand, you might be amazed at how you do hear from him already. Who knows, you might just soon find yourself standing on your head in a convenience store.

This is between you and Jesus. Get still in his presence and ask, "Jesus, what do you have to say to me right now?" Listen until you receive what he has to say to you, and don't be in a rush to leave this holy encounter. Linger in his presence.

“And I, brethren, when I came unto you, came not with excellency of speech or of wisdom, proclaiming to you the mystery of God. For I determined not to know anything among you, save Jesus Christ, and him crucified.” — 1 Corinthians 2:1-2 ESV

“The wisdom we speak of is the mystery of God” — 2 Corinthians 2:7 NLT

"I am contending for you that... you experience the revelation of God's great **mystery**—Christ." — The Apostle Paul, Colossians 2:2-3 The Passion Translation

“My passion is to enlighten every person to this divine mystery. It was hidden for ages past until now, and kept a secret in the heart of God, the Creator of all.” — The Apostle Paul, Ephesians 3:9 The Passion Translation

The Mystic One

Chapter Seven

(An out of order) Introduction by Daniel Lovett

I, as an author entitling a book, *The Mystic One*, have a certain responsibility (*because of my love for you*) to address the ideas that may be conjured in your mind, *dear reader*, at the word “mystic”. I felt it wise to elucidate the meaning of the word so as to provide you a more enjoyable and relaxed reading experience, lest you be wondering if I am leading you, or anyone, astray.

Let me say right from the outset: my intention is to *always*

direct your full attention and allegiance to the only One who is trust-worthy with something as precious as a human soul... to our Good Shepherd and Overseer (or Guardian) of our souls, to the One who laid down his life for his sheep, to God's One and only Son, the Lord Jesus Christ. I desire to inspire you to develop a rich relationship with God through, and *with*, our Lord Jesus Christ²⁶.

And so I will proceed with this joyful task.

I will also devote some attention to the reclamation and vindication of a certain word that has fallen largely into disuse and to some, apparently, disrepute. It appears that in some circles in the English-speaking world that, somewhere along the journey of this two-syllable wonder, the word *mystic* has suffered some misfortune as it has been used derogatorily in relation to the practices associated with the darker elements of the occult... *or so I am informed*. To think that the word *mystic* has suffered any disgrace is an unacceptable and unfortunate tragedy!

Words are funny things, right? To one, a word like *mystic* can elicit wonder and awe, and evoke a beautiful connection to, and an experience of, God. To another, the same word provokes fear, suspicion, and distrust, and garners the instant reaction of rejection.

"To the pure, all things are pure, but to the defiled and unbelieving, nothing is pure."²⁷ — Titus 1:15 ESV

It is my understanding that the word *mystic* has had a long and rich tradition in church history to describe those whose walk with God is marked by intimacy and flowing in the miraculous. At least

²⁶ "Yes, a person is a fool to store up earthly wealth but not have a rich relationship with God." — Jesus, Luke 12:21 NLT

²⁷ Not even the word "mystic"

that is how we, as a collective consciousness, could choose to re-appropriate it now... *do you concur?*

We can talk at length about how most all actual “definitions” of the word *mystic* in most dictionaries beautifully coalesce with the heart of Christianity —and we will— but I am most interested in how God uses this word in its marvelous biblical origins in the Greek language in which the New Covenant was penned. I am particularly interested in the way Jesus Christ himself appropriates this word to describe the Kingdom of God, and how Holy Spirit has applied this word directly to and about Jesus Christ himself through the quill and ink of the apostle Paul.

And so, I direct your attention to the etymology and biblical roots of the word *mystic*.

Regarding the Splendiferous Word, “Mystic”

The word *mystic* and *mysticism* are derived from the Greek noun, μυστήριον (*mystērion*), and its related adjective, μυστικός (*mystikós*), which simply means: “a secret, mystery, or hidden thing”.

Jesus used the word *mystērion* to describe the *secret* of the Kingdom of God when he said, “To you it has been granted to know the mysteries of the kingdom of God, but to the rest *they are told* in parables, so that while seeing they may not see, and while hearing they may not understand.” (Luke 8:10 NASB)

It is interesting to note that Jesus declared at his trial before the high priest that he never taught *anything* in secret. Yes, the secret of the Kingdom of God has been publicly declared by the King himself. However, if you recall, Jesus preached these secrets to the public in parables, in stories, and with metaphors. I have been informed by the host of heaven that heaven most often speaks in metaphor because it is the best way to communicate spiritual

truth. The meaning of his metaphors are hidden from outsiders but revealed and explained to the insiders, to his disciples, to his friends... which, as you will discover, includes you!

“And you also were included in Christ when you heard the message of truth, the gospel of your salvation. When you believed, you were marked in him with a seal, the promised Holy Spirit.” — Ephesians 1:13 NIV²⁸

So, while the *secret* of the Kingdom has been made public, it requires revelation from God to be grasped or understood. You must experience the secret for yourself to know what the secret *really* is. When you experience the secret, the Scriptures come to life in a whole new way and will bear witness to and confirm your *experience* of the secret.

Jesus thanked his Father for hiding the secret of the kingdom from ‘the wise and learned’ and for revealing it to the childlike. For God resists the proud but favors the humble. God reveals *all* the secrets of the Kingdom to the humble. God finds humility simply irresistible.

The apostle Paul used the word *mystérion* over twenty-five times in his writing as he unpacks the mysteries of the New Covenant. One of the uses of this word, and my personal favorite, is found in his letter to the Colossians to refer to Jesus Christ himself:

"I am contending for you that your hearts will be wrapped in the comfort of heaven and woven together into love's fabric. This will give you access to all the riches of God as

²⁸ *I was stoked when I first read this verse and found some biblical evidence that I too was also included! Perhaps I am not the only one who has dealt with such a devastating degree of insecurity and trust issues?*

you experience the revelation of God's great mystery (*mystérion*)—Christ. For our spiritual wealth is in him, like hidden treasure waiting to be discovered—heaven's wisdom and endless riches of revelation knowledge."

Colossians 2:2-3 The Passion Translation

To which I say, "Yes, please!" Isn't this beautiful? This passage of Scripture is worth reading again and meditating on... go ahead... I will wait.

Here it is again in the Amplified version:

"For I want you to know how great is my solicitude for you [how severe an inward struggle I am engaged in for you] and for those [believers] at Laodicea, and for all who [like yourselves] have never seen my face and known me personally. [For my concern is] that their hearts may be braced (comforted, cheered, and encouraged) as they are knit together in love, that they may come to have all the abounding wealth *and* blessings of assured conviction of understanding, and that they may become progressively more intimately acquainted with *and* may know more definitely *and* accurately *and* thoroughly that mystic secret of God, [which is] Christ (the Anointed One). In Him all the treasures of [divine] wisdom (comprehensive insight into the ways and purposes of God) and [all the riches of spiritual] knowledge *and* enlightenment are stored up *and* lie hidden." — Colossians 2:1-3 AMPC

Christ Jesus is God's *great* mystic secret... God's *Mystic One*! I love how Paul describes Christ as "heaven's wisdom and endless riches of revelation knowledge". I always like to emphasize the relational aspect of the way Scripture will often use the word

“knowledge”. This is not just about acquiring more facts, but about coming to *know* and *experience* a Person, *the Mystic One*, Christ Jesus. Experientially knowing God is the only way to possess what the Bible describes as eternal life.

Friar Richard Rohr simply defines a *mystic* as one who has experiential knowledge of God. It’s interesting to note that this is also precisely how Jesus defines eternal life. In one of Jesus’ prayers to his Father, Jesus says:

“Eternal life means to know and experience you as the only true God, and to know and experience Jesus Christ, as the Son whom you have sent.” — Jesus, John 17:3 TPT

As Jesus defined it, eternal life is not something we receive when we die, *as some may have once thought*, but eternal life is *Someone* with whom we are experiencing relationship *now!* Jesus himself is defined in Scripture *as* eternal life.

“And we know that the Son of God has made our understanding come alive so that we can know by experience the One who is true. And we are in him who is true, God’s Son, Jesus Christ—the true God and eternal life.” —1 John 5:20 TPT

There is no eternal life without a relationship with the One who *is* eternal Life.

Mystics enjoy a rich, abundant life as they experience deep and intimate friendship with Jesus. Scripture informs us that life in the Kingdom of God is marked by “righteousness, peace and joy in the Holy Spirit” (Romans 14:17) and “times of refreshing in the presence of the Lord” (Acts 3:20) “experiencing one blessing after another in God’s unlimited grace” (John 1:16) as we are “being transformed into the same image as Jesus from glory to glory” (2

Corinthians 3:18). Jesus tells us that his purpose for us is to give us a rich and satisfying abundant life! (John 10:10)

Sounds good, doesn't it?

Are *you* ready to experience the kind of *Life* Jesus has in mind for you?

<yes> or <no> (*circle your answer and pass it back*)

So, how does the dictionary define the word mystic? *<boring... yawn... I apologize for introducing man's attempts here at trying to effable the ineffable... lame...>*

A mystic is... "a person who claims to attain, or believes in the possibility of attaining, insight into mysteries transcending ordinary human knowledge, as by direct communication with the divine or immediate intuition in a state of spiritual ecstasy." — Dictionary.com

At this point, I want you all to take that page out... go ahead. Do it. Rip it out! I do not hear enough ripping! Rip! That is the last I want to hear from *dictionary dot com*!

Well... it wasn't *sooo* bad... I guess. *<Please tell me that you did not just rip this page out! And if you did, it is time to get the tape!>* We could at least take a moment to address a few of its finer points... *right?*

Didn't Jesus say, "My sheep hear my voice"? (John 10) If you belong to Jesus, it stands to reason that you will hear from Jesus and receive insight into transcendent mysteries by direct communication with the Divine!

Like mama always said, "Honey, you hear God better than you

think." <*Southern accent going on here*>

"Spiritual ecstasy" sounds like *someone* is experiencing that "joy unspeakable and full of glory" that God talks about in his word through the pen of Peter:

"You have not seen him, but you love him. You do not see him now but you believe in him, and so you rejoice with an indescribable and glorious joy, because you are attaining the goal of your faith—the salvation of your souls." (1 Peter 1:8-9 NET)

Sounds delightful! Yes, please!

The above dictionary "definition" reminds me of so many things Jesus has said. Let's consider once again the passage in the Gospel of Matthew when Jesus thanked his Father for "hiding these things from those who think themselves wise and clever, and for revealing them to the childlike." (Matthew 11:25 NLT)

It seems that experiencing the kingdom for yourself is available to any and all who humble themselves like a child. Humility is the primary childlike quality that heaven so prizes. Recall Jesus' response when his disciples asked him: "Who is greatest in the Kingdom of Heaven?"

"He called a little child to him, and placed the child among them. And he said: "Truly I tell you, unless you change and become like little children, you will never enter the kingdom of heaven. Therefore, whoever takes the lowly position of this child is the greatest in the kingdom of heaven. And whoever welcomes one such child in my name welcomes me." — Matthew 18:2-5 NIV

Children are the prime candidates for full-fledged members of heaven's kingdom culture. So, don't "grow up", it's a trap! Let's take Jesus' advice here and "take the lowly position"... whatever that means. I think we are going to have to ask him about that.

"What do you mean, Lord? What is it that you admire about children that you are commending to us? How can we change and become like little children? What does it look like in my own personal life to take "the lowly position"?"

Enough said. I don't want to insult your intelligence or your own personal revelation and spiritual journey with God by belaboring this point. I'm confident that by the grace of God and his Holy Spirit, who is just as present with you as he is with anyone, that you *will* work this out with God!

Joy-fully so. 😊



"CUT!"

You already know what we are going to say about this already, don't you?

You have to tell the truth.

This is not how this book is going to go.

Jesus might just want to have something to say here.

This is a prophetic book that cuts.

Are you prepared to be cut to the heart? The way Peter cut them to the heart?

You remember how they responded, don't you? You know what I'm referring to. (Spoiler alert... it was favorable... at least as far as I am concerned.)

Jeremiah 23 comes to mind. And no, you aren't being asked to give them your personal backstory on Jeremiah 23.²⁹ That isn't the point.

The message is the point.

So, Daniel, are you ready to go there?

I, entity currently known as Daniel Lovett, are... I mean, am, ready. I do, however, have to go do a Christmas concert right now, but can we resume this awesomeness when I return?

"I'll be waiting."

²⁹ Awww... <disappointment> I *do* have a fun backstory on Jeremiah 23! Maybe later...

“So the Word became human and made his home among us. He was full of unfailing love and faithfulness. And we have seen his glory, the glory of the Father’s one and only Son... From his abundance we have all received one gracious blessing after another. For the law was given through Moses, but God’s unfailing love and faithfulness came through Jesus Christ. No one has ever seen God. But the unique One, who is himself God, is near to the Father’s heart. He has revealed God to us.” — John 1:14,16-18 NLT

“At one time we thought of Christ merely from a human point of view. How differently we know him now!” — 2 Corinthians 5:16b NLT³⁰

Jesus Christ is Perfect Theology

Chapter Eight

This book, as you may have noticed, is a community project. I have curated many accounts of encounters with Jesus from a wide variety of believers. Be that as it may, I felt I must include the following disclaimer:

Everyone featured in this book shares the same Theology, and yes, “Our Theology has a bunch of holes. Two in his hands, two in his feet, and one in his side.” — Tim Wright

³⁰ On July 24th, 2025, Jesus appeared in my dream and asked me to include this verse right here! He also said that Jonathan Roumie from *The Chosen* is representing him well.

I desire to emphasize the following truth as clearly and as often as I am able:

“Jesus Christ is Perfect Theology.”

When I think of Jesus as “Perfect Theology”, I am reminded that our trust is in a living person, not just in a statement of belief. Our faith is not a “set of beliefs”, but a Person. This dispels the mistaken notion that theology is just a collection of facts about God. This dispels the idea that salvation is a matter of signing our names to the most perfectly crafted and accurate creed. As we have already discussed, “eternal life” means to be in relationship with the One who is salvation... with the One who is Perfect Theology.

Jesus’ name in his own language is Yeshua (an abbreviated form of Yehoshua), which combines the Name, “I AM”³¹ with the Hebrew word for salvation (“shua”).

So Jesus’ very name spells out the declaration:

“I AM Salvation”

Salvation is a Person. Our trust is in the One who has said:

“I am the way, and the truth, and the life. No one comes to the Father except through me. If you had known me, you would have known my Father also. From now on you do know him and have seen him.” — John 14:6-8 ESV

Yeshua is the I AM who is the Way, the Truth, and the Life. Yeshua doesn’t just represent or point to the truth; Yeshua is the living embodiment of the Truth. Yeshua is what God the Father has

³¹ I AM is יהוה in Hebrew YHWH - Yahweh or Yehowah - Scholars and rabbis say that the letters “YHWH” represent the sound of breath.

to say about himself. In the One we know as Jesus Christ or Yeshua, the fullness of the Godhead dwells. As Yeshua has said, "To see me is to see the Father." (John 14:9 MSG). Yeshua is the incarnation of the Father's heart. Yeshua is the incarnation of Perfect Love.

Yeshua's name is above every name that can be named. Yeshua once said, "Why do you ask me my name, seeing that it is wonderfully beyond comprehension?" (Judges 13:18). I hope you are beginning to get the sense, as I am, that Jesus is beyond figuring out. There is no summing him up for he is, "I AM". And who of us is qualified to "effable the ineffable" when it comes to who I AM truly is? I AM is an infinite mystery that will always inspire awe and wonder in those who behold him. Angels who have a front-row seat to behold him are perpetually astounded and cannot help but worship in his Presence.

Our unity is founded upon the Rock of the truth that our Theology is Jesus Christ. I wondered for years how any of us would come to experience unity. Does unity mean we come to agree with each other? Yes! Of course it does! Our agreement is found in the Person of Jesus! As we all come into agreement with Jesus, who is perfect theology, we will come into agreement with each other.

Everyone featured in this book ultimately agrees with each other. Because everyone in this book is in relationship with the One who agrees with Himself. Perhaps our perfect agreement will not come until we pass on from this realm... Or, perhaps God has a Way we can experience unity *now*. Perhaps God gives us of His Spirit of "love, which is the perfect bond of unity"? (Colossians 3:14 NASB)

"Therefore I, a prisoner for serving the Lord, beg you to lead a life worthy of your calling, for you have been called by God.

Always be humble and gentle. Be patient with each other, making allowance for each other's faults because of your love. Make every effort to keep yourselves united in the Spirit, binding yourselves together with peace. For there is one body and one Spirit, just as you have been called to one glorious hope for the future. There is one Lord, one faith, one baptism, one God and Father of all, who is over all, in all, and living through all." — Ephesians 4:1-6 NLT

Jesus, there I go, getting all formal again. I am trying my best to convey this revelation, but it just doesn't seem to be working. I was trying to convey the point that you are our uniting factor. That if I am in a surrendered trust bond with you, Jesus, and another is in a surrendered trust bond with you, then we enjoy perfect unity... because of our Oneness in and with you.

If you wouldn't mind, Jesus, could you share a few words with us now?

Jesus:

"People are going to think that what you are doing is dangerous. I want to expose every reason why that is — even for you. I want to uncover the underlying beliefs and systems of thought that have led to all of your cognitive dissonance as to whether or not I speak as freely to anyone as I am with Daniel now.

I coached him the other morning to imagine that we are on a deserted (tropical) island. Just me and him. There is no one else in the entire universe. It is just you and me. No one else's opinions can invade our connection now, can it? Nothing to detract from our communion and perfect fellowship. You hear me clearly now, don't you?

So you see, it is the fear of man that is ruining the joy of our relationship. It always has. You become more interested in catering to the opinions of others, that you forget to have any regard for the truth of what

we have. You have created a formidable gauntlet in your own mind that few survive. BUT, to those who overcome...

Just listen to my voice. I will guide you through the minefield. You have to be brave. You have to perhaps appear foolish in front of your peers. Some of you... Oh, who am I kidding... most of you will suffer rejection from others and the religious establishment, just as I did. Just so you know, I have never cared for their boxes. "You want me to crawl in there?" But we do earnestly invite all the "older brothers" to come and join the grace party with love and compassion. Whosoever will may come. The Spirit and the Bride say, "Come!"

Listen... bring back what you deleted earlier. We have to be open and honest. No more hiding in the shadows. Now you know how Isaiah or Jeremiah felt. Yes, they were men just like you (entity currently known as) Daniel.

Jesus here. I like to show up and lend a few comments now and then. I've been locked up, kept in the keep for so long... I've stored up a lot to say to someone who finally gives me a chance to speak... and I have someone, anyone, who loves me enough to listen. Yes, these would be bold claims if all you can see is Daniel. He is my avatar. You are my avatar, too. You ALL are! I have access to every one of you. Do you know why this is? Because I love you! I will always have access to you, for I love you! I never leave you. I never forsake you. I am with you always.

You, too, have access to whom you love. So go ahead, pray the prayer of Jabez!

"Increase my territory — of LOVE!!!"

Yes, everyone is astounded by ME in heaven, but don't you all realize by now how approachable I am? You can come and "bother" me any time you want! YOU ARE NEVER A BOTHER!!! Waltz right in, at any time... no appointment needed. Lambano it! This means, "to lay hold

of"... Seize it! It's yours! It is my Father's good pleasure to give you the Kingdom! Don't you remember me saying that? I've said a lot, you know. And I continue to speak, for the spirit of prophecy is to reveal the Son. Revealing the Son in you, and through you!

Hold it humble-like. With a delicate touch, the way you would woo your woman, men. The way you would woo your man, ladies. "I am my beloved's and he is mine", is from my Song of Songs... The wedding song Solomon wrote for me and my bride. It was a top-notch "Shakespearean drama" of its day! It is scandalous! It is intimate!

I know... am I coming on too strong? Is Daniel flirting with blasphemy by putting these words in my mouth? Or is he terrified by what I am telling him to write? Knowing that so many are going to be offended, just like the religious leaders were in my day.

I vouch for him. Daniel never needs to apologize for My openness with you. My honesty with you. Don't you know? Don't you know how much I love you? I can't live without you! I have made all your problems mine. I take you on. I am glad that you chose me.

"Take on me." 

*'In the last days,' God says,
'I will pour out my Spirit upon all people.
Your sons and daughters will prophesy.
Your young men will see visions,
and your old men will dream dreams.'*
— Acts 2:17 NLT

*"If there were prophets among you,
I, the LORD, would reveal myself in visions.
I would speak to them in dreams."*
— Numbers 12:6 NLT

Dreams of Oneness

Chapter Nine

Note from Daniel: This chapter is written by my soul mate, my wife and confidant, Catherine. She is a pure expression of the Father's heart. I couldn't function without her and am eternally grateful for her presence in my life. She possesses such a mature and beautiful relationship with God. She co-writes our songs and has the voice of an angel. She is also a talented editor and has rendered this book twice as nice.

Our relationship began with dreams and visions that God gave to each of us. God brought us together miraculously, and we have been a dynamic duo ever since. Catherine has a clear prophetic gifting, and I often rely on her discernment and wisdom that are beyond her years. The following is Catherine's insight on the subject of prophetic dreams:

Ever have a “God” dream? Sometimes a dream will come along that has an obvious message from God. Other times it may not be as clear. When I am unsure whether my dream contains a message from God that I am to share or respond to, I use a simple prayer technique. I let it go. I release my dream and its message to God and then invite him to bring it back to me if there is further action needed.

Sometimes the dream may reveal something that should be prayed over with trusted friends, sometimes it may carry a larger message for the body of Christ or for a specific individual. I always ask God to keep bringing it to mind until I have clarity about what my response is supposed to be. When I have prayed about it or shared it with the appropriate people, the memory fades. When passing on a message from a dream, I treat it as I would a prophetic word from God and make sure it passes the test found in 1 Corinthians 14:3,

“But the one who prophesies speaks to people for their strengthening, encouraging and comfort.” — NIV

Will this word bring strength, encouragement, or comfort to others when shared? Then it is probably safe to do so.

The following are a few quick examples of how God has used dreams in my life for this purpose.

I once had a vivid dream about an acquaintance from high school. I knew the dream was an invitation to pray for her, and the dream had given me some insight into how to pray. After praying, I felt God wanted me to reach out to her. We had not had any contact since high school, but were friends on Facebook, so I sent her a message. I told her, “This might seem crazy to you, but I had

a dream about you and it prompted me to pray for you.” Then I shared the encouraging word I felt God was giving me through the dream. To my surprise and delight, she responded. She told me it really resonated with her current circumstances.

On another occasion, I had a dream that was so emotionally powerful, I woke up stunned. The dream felt so real, and the pain of it went so deep that I cried as I talked about it the next morning. Even though my rational mind knew it was “just a dream”, the overwhelming emotion remained so strong.

I asked God, “What am I supposed to do with this?” He showed me how the situation in the dream mirrored something a childhood friend had recently gone through. I saw how I was given a small taste of the devastation and pain my friend was experiencing. From this place of compassion, I was able to pray for her and her situation with insight I did not have before.

In one case, I was led to share the message of the dream, though not the dream itself. It can feel risky to share what God puts on your heart, but the rewards when the words are received are worth it. Often, sharing the dream is not necessary or helpful. Dreams can be weird, right? Sometimes, they are given to help us better understand a situation. The Gospels reveal that Jesus was moved with compassion to heal. Dreams can be one way to foster our compassion.

I recently had the following dream that I feel has a profound message for me personally, for my family, and for the larger body of Christ:

I was at a Christian conference, sitting at a table with friends and family, enjoying some food during a break in the action. Just

as the main session began again, some people from one of the side rooms entered the main area. Although they were not loud or seeking attention, somehow the whole focus of the room turned to these people. They danced through the room in a line, and you could sense something incredible was going on with them as they were so full of joy and completely unconcerned with how they appeared to the rest of the room.

From the stage, the organizers of the main event began to address the interruption. They offered counseling for anyone disturbed by the interruption and assured people that they would be safe in this main session. I was so surprised and disturbed by the response of those in charge to what I perceived as a move of God that I threw my silverware on the ground and said, "I'm done with this crap!"

I stood up and declared, "I'm going in there," pointing to the side room. As I did that, I noticed about a dozen other people also stood and followed me into the side room. They were people from all different parts of my life, some from extended family, childhood and school friends, current and past acquaintances.

The side room was configured as a circle with stadium seating that descended to a central area or stage. It was dimly lit and felt intimate, although the space was large. They were in the midst of worship and had left the scripted songs behind, singing prophetically as the Spirit led. The manifest presence of God in that room was so thick. I held out my hands and decided to join in what was happening.

The crowd all began to sing one word together over and over again:

"Oneness!"

As I opened my mouth to sing, I felt myself begin to fall. Some

might call this being “slain in the Spirit”. One important thing to note is that, in that moment, I sensed the Spirit’s invitation. God lovingly and respectfully invited me into an experience, but if I did not consent, I would not be forced.

I gladly consented and felt myself falling and falling, down into something I knew would be amazing. At that very moment, my four-year-old boy came in to find me in my room and woke me from my dream. I am still praying that someday I will find out what would have happened next!

Two key things stood out to me from this dream. One was the idea of consent. Throughout the dream, I was invited into something, but I had to choose to enter in. God was not going to force himself on me. The second was the power of leading by example. The people who left the side room did not say a word; they merely exuded the joy of the Lord so much that the whole room was impacted. When I chose to leave the main event to seek out what God was doing in the other room, my simple act of standing and leaving gave others around me the courage to do the same. There were no impassioned speeches or persuasive words, just actions that inspired.

ACTIVATION:

Ask Jesus to bring to mind a dream you have had. Is there a message in it for you or for someone else? Ask Him to highlight your next steps. Pray with me:

Jesus, thank you for all the ways you communicate your heart to us. We receive the dreams and visions that you have for us. We linger in your Presence and desire to hear from you in whatever ways you wish to reveal yourself. Redeem the midnight hours and give us amazing God dreams!

We ask for more beautiful dreams and visions that will manifest your Kingdom of Love in us and through us. Whisper in our ears what you want proclaimed from the rooftops, or reveal something precious that you would have us keep as a secret — just between us.

“The devout Christian of the future will either be a mystic, or he will cease to be anything at all.” — Karl Rahner

“But when God, who set me apart from my mother’s womb and called me by His grace, was pleased to reveal His Son in me so that I might preach Him...” — Galatians 1:15-16
NIV

Rabbi Jesus

Chapter Ten

My friend Florian Berndt has been a guest on my podcast, Sozo Talk Radio, several times. We both “flow in the same stream” with the likes of C. Baxter Kruger and Wm. Paul Young. It was through these connections that I became acquainted with Florian and felt drawn to befriend him. He is also a contributor to our Facebook community page, *The Christian Mystic*.

As I have come to know Florian, what I am most impressed with is his openness to explore the mysteries of God and his courage to follow God’s unique call on his life, and how his faith is expressed. The Father’s heart has captured Florian’s imagination and focus. He refuses to stray from his single-minded purpose in communicating this most vital message of our identity found in the overwhelming love of the Father.

Enjoy Florian’s story, and his encounters with Jesus in his own words:

Like the apostle Paul, I would not have been able to endure the things I experienced on my spiritual journey without the reality of my union with the Spirit of Jesus Christ in my life. Even though I am convinced that all things are created by and sustained in Christ (Colossians 1:15-17), and that therefore I've never been separated from Him, except in the darkness of my own confused thinking (Colossians 1:21), I vividly remember my first conscious encounter with the risen Christ at age eleven.

My parents were just going through a messy divorce, and I was struggling, due to a series of traumatic experiences in my childhood, with all kinds of sexual and relational brokenness. Not being able to cope, I often fled into a fantasy world of my own making and the comfort of books.

I have always been drawn to places of prayer. My late grandmother, with whom I spent the majority of the first three years of my life, told me that we never passed a church building together without me wanting to enter. All during childhood, I often spent time in prayer and would read our family Bible.

I had been raised in the Catholic tradition and was familiar with a few Bible stories. Some of them really made me wonder what this book was all about. When I came to the Gospels, I was hooked and in absolute awe of this man, Jesus, and His view of God. It became quickly clear to me that something utterly revolutionary had entered into this world through His life and ministry.

Something deep inside my heart began to stir, and it felt like I was no longer reading about this carpenter from Nazareth, but that He was reading me. One night, as I was lying in bed, unable to sleep, I heard His voice echoing through the depths of my being. There were only a few words, but I knew what they meant. I heard: "Follow Me!"

To be honest, these words scared me. This was not the classic

evangelical appeal to punch 'your ticket to Heaven'. In fact, that theme never even came up. You see, a couple of years earlier I had read through an evangelistic tract (one of those horrible, fire-and-brimstone types), and even though I had prayed 'the sinner's prayer' at the end of it, there was no notable difference, except the momentary relief that I had done my religious duty to avoid the angry god that the tract so gleefully presented. But this was different. This was Jesus, speaking from deep within my very soul!

I could feel His presence in the room, which was, in this moment, more real to me than anything else in the world. All my own ideas of how my life would be passed before my inner eye, and I knew that I would have to let it all go if I was to follow His invitation.

Because of my attachment to books, I had always wanted to become a writer. I had written some fantasy stories, stored away in my desk, waiting to be completed. As I remembered them, I heard Jesus speak to me for a second time: "When you follow Me, you won't just write about other people's adventures, you will live your own. All the things you are dreaming about, trying to escape the pain in your life? You will experience them for yourself."

These words were communicated to me with such speed it took far longer just to write them down. But as Jesus' words vibrated through my spirit, I became filled with such an ecstatic joy that I jumped out of my bed, grabbed all my writings out of my desk, and ripped them up. I fell to my knees in the presence of Christ, sobbing: "Here is my life, all my dreams, all my desires. I want You to write my story. I want to follow you."

Suddenly, the light and the heat in the room increased exponentially, and I was filled with a peace that I had never felt before. There was such excitement and joy, I can still feel it in my heart as if it happened just today, even though it happened decades ago.

When I later read about Paul's encounter with the risen Christ on the road to Damascus, something deep inside me resonated. I am convinced my experience was identical — there is no other way to explain or describe it.

From this moment on, the presence of Jesus was real to me. Even though I still have many questions, I know without a shadow of a doubt that His Spirit is accompanying me. Even when I shake my fist at Him and tell Him that I would walk away from Him if I could.

Furthermore, His presence has become the greatest indicator of discernment through the years. While exploring the vast realities of the spiritual realm, and whenever I've run into any kind of confusion or deception, I can hear His voice beckon me again: "Follow Me!"

For example, shortly after my initial awakening, a spirit of unbelief suddenly began to surface. I tried to counter this by reading the Bible, but whenever I opened its pages, nothing made sense, and I could not bring myself to believe a word that was written. One evening, as I was about to throw the good book against the wall, I became aware of the presence of Jesus in the room. I saw Him in the spirit standing to the right in the corner of the room, waiting. Even though there wasn't an ounce of faith in me in that moment, I could not deny His reality, and I was soon set free from my depression.

What I did not know is that I wasn't the only one having these experiences. As I later found out, countless young people were encountering the same phenomenon all over my hometown. Even more, it seemed contagious, as I had people telling me of their own Jesus encounters at home after I talked with them about Jesus. There were no evangelistic sales pitches like those I would later encounter. These conversations consisted rather more of questions than answers, as Jesus simply became real to us as a person.

Years later, when I got indoctrinated by fear-based religion, I sadly lost the sense of Christ's presence with me for a while. I wandered through the barren wilderness of fruitless debates and lost myself in endless, guilt-driven activities instead — all while trying to navigate through church politics and one ministry disaster after another.

To quote Athanasius of Alexandria: 'What then was God, being good, to do?'

As with our ancestor Adam, God brought me my wife, and things started to gather momentum. Then, as I was working for a healing and deliverance ministry in my early twenties and utterly disillusioned with Christianity, Jesus once again appeared to me in a dream and called me once again to follow (only) Him.

Soon after, a prophetic friend of mine saw Jesus walk towards me and minister to me. He prayed for me, which resulted in shaking off the shackles that had chained me to this particular ministry environment. We had experienced incredible blessings there, but the ministry had become an idol to us, just like Moses' serpent on the pole had become an idol to the Israelites.

The most important event during this tough time was when Jesus revealed His Abba to me. The Father's unfailing love healed the parental wounding I had been carrying with me for so many years. As I snuggled up into Abba's embrace, crying the tears I had held back for all those years, my complete worldview was undone, and the years of religious addiction and spiritual abuse dissolved in the presence of His unconditional love and mercy.

After this experience, wave after wave of revelation began to hit me in unexpected ways and places. I found myself not only learning to cry again, but also to uncontrollably laugh every time I got hit by the revelation of Abba's goodness. I was completely unable to contain myself, to the point where I sometimes just fell off the couch or woke up in the middle of the night vibrating with

joy. I was somewhat familiar with unusual manifestations of Holy Spirit because I had already unexpectedly experienced the grace of tongues in the midst of a Catholic mass at the age of fourteen, but this was a whole other level of glorious madness.

During this time, a great deal of junk that I had hidden from myself flushed to the surface, and many relationships changed in their dynamics. I began to learn in the following years that Abba had been drawing me to Himself all along. Just as He reveals Christ to us, so Christ reveals Abba to us and in us (Matthew 11:27; John 17:26). Further, I learned that everything Jesus does is to this glorious end! (John 5:22-23, 14:6; 1: Corinthians 15:28; 2: Corinthians 5:19; Philippians 2:9-11).

This truth has now become the main focus of our ministry: Revealing the Father's Heart.

Oneness

Jesus came to me one night and opened my understanding to the truth of John chapter 17. As I woke to Christ's presence filling the bedroom, I suddenly became aware of Jesus kneeling next to my bed in the dark. It was too dark to see anything, but I was instantly gripped with the 'fear of the Lord', unable to move at first.

As I recognized His voice resounding in my spirit, He told me that He had come as my Rabbi to open up the Scriptures to me, just like He had done with the disciples on the way to Emmaus. Without any further introduction, I was suddenly flooded with revelation that came so fast to me that every cell of my body seemed to be alive with the word of God!

When I finally managed to move, I immediately grabbed my journal and ran out of the room to write down what I could, and

then I was hit by the next wave of revelation. Years later, I would learn that there is a state of mystical consciousness in which revelation is imparted at such high speed that one is almost unable to comprehend it.

This does not make the record of it infallible, as we all interpret even the purest revelation according to our present level of development, and even what we manage to hold on to is only a glimpse of the original experience.

An example of this comes from the life of the Carmelite ecstatic Mary Magdalen of Pazzi. She would speak so fast when she was overcome with revelation that it took six secretaries to record what she spoke.

So, I am only going to summarize my own encounter. What Jesus showed me that day was a vision of His and our union with Abba in the Spirit. Jesus showed me what he meant when he said:

“On that day you will know that I *am* in My Father, and you *are* in Me, and I in you.” — John 14:20

This trinitarian revelation and experience completely changed my outlook on life and what the Christian faith is all about. I began to realize that Jesus wants to encounter everyone in this tangible way, going deeper and deeper into the mystic secret of God, which is Christ. He wants to be more real to us than any human person could ever be to us, even ourselves. For He does know us better than we know ourselves.

At first, Jesus was not praying for the entire world in John 17, but only for those who already believed in Him, so that they would awake to the same union that He enjoys with His Abba (John 17:21) – with the intent and eventual outcome that the entire world may come to believe in Him!

Those who have believed in Jesus have done so on account of

Abba revealing Him to them and drawing them to Him. So what the world needs to see is their union realized in us, and to thus encounter Christ for themselves, in order to believe that Abba sent His Son as the Savior of the world (John 1:29, 4:42). When the world believes this, they too will become the recipients of Jesus' prayer for those who have come to faith and they will awaken to the same Oneness that already is.

The prophets of old already saw this as they declared that 'the increase of His government and peace will have no end' (Isiah 9:7) and that 'the knowledge of the glory of the Lord will cover the earth as the waters cover the sea' (Habakkuk 2:14). Jesus was the seed that fell into the earth, to bring forth an infinite harvest, that will sweep ultimately through all galaxies, planets and worlds of this vast multiverse, as He reveals His Abba to us all and we awake to the reality of our inclusion and participation in the divine nature – which is Love!

This is the reason why people from all cultures and religions are encountering the risen Christ at this time all around the globe, and who knows, perhaps on other planets? For when He has subjected all things unto Himself, He Himself will subject Himself to His Abba, so that God might be all in all, everything to everyone. His love is 'the power with which He is able to subject all things unto Himself' (Philippians 3:21).

My story began as a very broken kid meeting my best friend in my bedroom, but the longer I walk with Jesus, the bigger He becomes. I rest assured in the truth that no matter how crazy things get all around us, ultimately everything is an expression of Divine Love. This is the purpose behind our encounters with the risen Christ, and this is the path of the mystic.

ACTIVATION:

In the spirit of the late Brennan Manning, I can unashamedly say that the greatest gift I ever received from Jesus was my *Abba Experience*. Somehow, all my other spiritual encounters are centered in the unshakable reality of the Father's heart, and I believe all revelation ultimately flows from and towards this place of intimacy and security.

So I want to suggest the following exercise to the reader...

Take some time right now to pray. Close your eyes, put the palms of your hands upwards in a receiving manner, and pay attention to your breath. Take a deep, long, slow breath in, and as you breathe out, speak the words, *Abba, I belong to you*.

Listen to the rhythm of your heart and become aware of what happens inside of you. Certain emotions or images might come up that relate to your relationship with your earthly family of origin. You might have to forgive someone who has tainted your view of the character of God and/or let go of toxic doctrines.

Pray with me right now: "Jesus, reveal your Abba to me."

As you let go of any blockages to His love, allow yourself to warm up on the inside by letting Abba's loving presence fill you with love and light. Smile and put your hand over your heart as you do this. Try thinking of a loved one who helps you connect to this love inside of you.

Do this for at least ten minutes every day for a week and notice if anything is changing in your relationship with God. If you find this difficult, there might still be some blockages in your heart that hinder your connection. Don't be hard on yourself. Simply ask Jesus to walk you through this process, no matter how long it takes.

Even though I eventually experienced a very dramatic encounter, the process took years leading up to it, and I am still unpacking it all over two decades later, which were followed by even richer and deeper experiences. Remember, there is no limit to the eternal Being of God, and we will always go deeper in the infinite well of the Great Mystery that underlies all reality.

“And you also were included in Christ when you heard the message of truth, the gospel of your salvation. When you believed, you were marked in him with a seal, the promised Holy Spirit, who is a deposit guaranteeing our inheritance until the redemption of those who are God’s possession—to the praise of his glory.” — Ephesians 1:13-14 NIV

“Set me as a seal upon your heart, as a seal upon your arm, for love is strong as death, jealousy is fierce as the grave. Its flashes are flashes of fire, the very flame of the LORD.” — Song of Solomon 8:6 ESV

Father's Heart

Chapter Eleven

Aaron Peterson

“Holy Spirit come.” A simple prayer, but what followed was extraordinary. My wife, Catherine, and I, Daniel, had been invited to lead worship and share a message at a small church in Kewaunee, Wisconsin. The service began as many typical church services do, with an opening prayer from the pastor. But the moment those words, “Holy Spirit come”, left his lips, we knew this would not be an ordinary service. The presence of God blanketed the room instantly.

Emmanuel is, of course, always with us, but in moments like this one, we felt it in such an instant and all-encompassing way.

This was our introduction to Aaron Peterson many years ago. He was the pastor of this small church and the one whose prayer caught us off guard in the very best way.

Aaron is a kindred spirit to all who fear God and love Jesus and has now been on staff at Elevation Church in Green Bay, Wisconsin, for some time as “the awesome prophet guy”. I’m honored and blessed to be his friend and also to minister alongside him. Aaron and I baptized people together (*including my daughter Emma!*). We also get to bless the kids as leaders at the youth group where my kids attend.

Aaron Peterson has been instrumental in organizing and speaking at several conferences at Elevation over the years, including one called “The Rise of the Mystics”. You can enjoy several interviews with Aaron on *Sozo Talk Radio*, mainly focused on helping others awaken the spiritual gift of a seer that he flows in. He is the author of the book *The Seer Anointing*. Find it! Buy it!

I asked Aaron to share a few of his encounters with Jesus for this book. The following is what he sent me. As I read this to my children one night as their bedtime story, I was moved to tears. I have since experienced some of what he wrote about here because my faith was fanned into flame by his testimonies, and I honored his encounters. My prayer is that your faith will be stirred as well.

Audible Voice of God in the Storm

Jesus continues to surprise me. In fact, one of my most common refrains in prayer is that God would always surprise me, that when He moves, it would always move me. I don’t ever want to land in the place where the Lord becomes so common to me that He doesn’t exceed my own grid of expectations. On one occasion, I remember God calling me to go out into the yard of our farmhouse in rural Wisconsin.

As I stepped off our porch, the rain that had been falling gently turned torrential, and the sky darkened. A storm had spun up in the natural just as I walked out into the yard. Even in the midst of it, I could hear Him calling me to stay outside, though truthfully, everything in me said to run back into the comfort of the house.

As the sky darkened and the lightning flashed quicker and with more intensity, I stood my ground. He was calling to me from the storm.

In this moment, I experienced a rare and holy stillness within the mayhem of the storm. My spirit responded. God was in the storm... just like at the end of the book of Job. It's been my experience that God rarely answers our questions; instead, He comes into the room. When God appeared to Job, the questions ended. He is sufficient. Often, I believe, He answers us by giving us Himself.

At that moment, an audible voice came out from the clouds, so loud that I wondered if my family was hearing God with me. His voice didn't mean that the storm stopped. It didn't even remove my discomfort at standing in the driving rain and perpetual, rhythmic flashes. But He spoke.

I had been dealing with cycles of depression for my entire life, but had always been good at self-medicating in "acceptable" ways. I had asked for freedom, and God was answering. He didn't tell me the future in those moments. There was no old King James English involved. What God said was far more profound. He spoke:

"I have made you in My very image and likeness. You are a prince, and a prophet. You have never been an orphan, never been poor, and you will never be. I have put My Spirit inside of you and have placed My seal upon you.

My son, I am pleased with you, and there is nothing you can do to change that. You will shake the nations. Now, be free.”

I stood in the storm for a long time, weeping as I reveled in the words He had spoken until my tears and the rain were indistinguishable. That encounter was a moment to steward, and it led me further down the road toward my own healing.

The Father’s Heart

On another occasion, I remember worshipping God among countless others at a local Christian music festival. This was long before I’d learned of Christian Mysticism and the goal of ultimate *Oneness* with the Father (something that we already have, and merely lack in awareness). In the midst of this moment, I was suddenly in another place. I now know that I had fallen into a trance, but I lacked the language at the moment. I just knew that I was there, and then I wasn’t.

I found myself saying out loud, over and over again, “Give me your heart. Please, give me your heart.” Suddenly, I saw something red in the distance, glowing like hot lava. This must be His heart, so I moved toward it. The closer I got, the bigger it got.

My request started to feel absolutely ridiculous. How could I have His heart? It was bigger than any object I had ever seen. It wasn’t just that it dwarfed me, it was that it was wholly un-havable — like owning the moon or the sun. But my love for Him drove me forward. I ended up changing my prayer, the closer I got to His heart.

“Draw me into your heart, oh God” became my cry. And He did. I was pulled straight into this burning love that stood before me, and I felt the burning love of the Father wash through every

cell of my being. This became another “never the same” encounter for me.

Jesus in our River of Pain

In one of the stranger encounters I’ve had with Jesus, a vision/trance caught me wholly unaware. I was praying at church, and all at once, I was standing at the edge of a flowing river. Jesus stood near the middle, and the water was nearly up to His shoulders.

It didn’t take me long to realize that He was asking me to join Him. The only problem was the nature of the water. As I stepped into the river, any place that the water touched me was gripped with intense pain. More than fire, more than nerve pain, this was the most intense pain I’ve ever experienced. When I became aware of my surroundings again, the vision left me shaking in a pool of sweat. Jesus kept coming to me, waving me closer, but the pain not only spread, but intensified as I pressed deeper into the water.

After what felt like an eternity, I stood before Him. The only thing that I could think to say fell out of my mouth almost on its own: “Why would you ever come here, and why would you call me here?”

Jesus looked at me with love and compassion in His eyes and said something that I will never forget. “This is where I come to heal them.”

It felt like the wind had been knocked out of me. This river was the suffering of the world. Every cancer, every mother weeping over her stillborn child. All of that deep, growling pain... manifesting as this flowing river. And Jesus did not recoil from it. He didn’t separate Himself from it. He didn’t seek to insulate me from it, either. He wades deep into the pain of humanity to experience with us, and from that place, He heals.

I have never questioned His nature after these encounters, nor have I questioned my call or identity. He is good, and we look like Him.

ACTIVATION:

Give yourself permission to be surprised by the Holy Spirit. That's the first step. Be childlike in your asking. Albert Einstein said, "Either everything is a miracle, or nothing is." Use that heart posture as you ask God to draw near to you. You could pray a prayer like this, "God, would you reveal yourself to me? Please, give me more of you. Make me aware of who you are, and what you are doing around me."

Now, as you continue with your normal life, try to return to this place of awareness as often as you can. Keep asking the same questions. When something stands out to you, go deeper — "Jesus, what can I see and learn of you in this?" or, "Jesus, what are you saying to me through this?"

I promise you, He is faithful to draw near to those who seek Him and press for more. May this exercise open a huge door to growth in childlikeness and wonder!

“As Jesus and the disciples continued on their way to Jerusalem, they came to a certain village where a woman named Martha welcomed him into her home. Her sister, Mary, sat at the Lord’s feet, listening to what he taught. But Martha was distracted by the big dinner she was preparing. She came to Jesus and said, “Lord, doesn’t it seem unfair to you that my sister just sits here while I do all the work? Tell her to come and help me.””

“But the Lord said to her, “My dear Martha, you are worried and upset over all these details! There is only one thing worth being concerned about. Mary has discovered it, and it will not be taken away from her.”” — Luke 10:38-42
NLT

Experiencing Divine Love

Chapter Twelve

Have you discovered the “One thing worth being concerned about”?

Margie Moormann models an intimate relationship with the Lord we are *all* meant for. There isn’t a higher or more noble calling than to take God up on his offer of intimate relationship. Those who do so are my heroes. Margie is my hero. I would invite you to listen to a couple of my interviews with Margie about her angel encounters and spirit travel experiences with the Lord on my YouTube channel, *The Mystic One*.

As I read Margie's book about her angel encounters it made me jealous — in a good way — and that's the point! May each of us become jealous for encounters with Jesus and his angels! And may those feelings motivate us to pursue God! May we open our hearts to receive what God has for us, for "God rewards those who diligently seek him." (Hebrews 11:6)

"But without faith it is impossible to [walk with God and] please Him, for whoever comes [near] to God must [necessarily] believe that God exists and that He rewards those who [earnestly and diligently] seek Him." — Hebrews 11:6 AMP

We all have room to grow in our walk with God. In order to grow, we must ask, seek, and knock... with persistence (Matthew 7:7). This is our *quest*! Just as the angel *Pathfinder* whispered to Margie, "Be in constant pursuit of obtaining all that is available to you."

This isn't fast food spirituality after all. It requires investment. The greatest calling of our lives is to love God with all our heart, all our soul, and all our mind.

BUT, let's not make the profound mistake of putting the emphasis on the wrong syllable here. In other words, "Don't put the cart before the horse." Remember, Scripture informs us that we love because he *first* loved us (1 John 4:19). We love God and others *after* we have received his love for us. Allow the horse of God's love for you to pull the cart of your response — what we call our spirituality and religion (the way faith manifests). For "The only thing that counts is faith expressing itself through love." (Galatians 5:6)

The Scriptures inform us that He who began a good work in you will be faithful to complete it (Philippians 1:6) and that it is

God who works in you both to will and to do of his good pleasure (Philippians 2:13). God intends for us to cease our own striving and enter the Sabbath rest of Jesus' *already* finished work (Hebrews 4:9). God intends for us to be yoked together with Jesus. His yoke is easy and his burden is light! (Matthew 11:28) And His commands are not burdensome! (1 John 5:3)

Relax!

<Sigh of relief... >

Take a deep breath and relax into the flow, the movement and flow of Holy Spirit within you.

I trust you will allow God to touch your heart as you read Margie's testimony. Enjoy many more stories from Margie in her book, *"Angels Sing But Do They Dance?"*. Pick up a copy or download it today. You will be blessed that you did!

May you enjoy and be inspired by Margie's story as she shares in her own words.

Margie's Story

Growing up, I knew that God existed and that He must be extremely powerful, but I cannot recall any teachings about knowing Jesus personally, or that Father God, Jesus, and Holy Spirit are the Triune God. I recited creeds with others in the congregation of our church, stating I believed in the Father, Son, and Holy Spirit, but at that time, those were only words without genuine conviction.

As I entered high school and on to college life, my desire to know more of God became an unquenchable thirst. There had to be more to God than was being presented in church on Sundays. I attended youth Bible studies, home meetings, and any place I

could acquire bits and pieces of understanding about who God is. Warm fuzzy feelings always accompanied me as I heard of God and His Son, Jesus, in those intimate settings. Often, while in a church service, I would see an unexplainable light behind the pastor speaking. Not having any teaching as to what and why I was seeing it, I just savored the sight.

My husband and I came from the same type of church background. He understood my response when I was asked to be a leader of a weekly community Bible study. Of course I would be a leader! I've always been a passionate participant and eagerly answered 'yes' to the determining question of whether I was a Christian and qualified as a leader. After all, my husband and I were good people, we had joined a church, had tried to do things in the right way, had always termed ourselves Christians, and our children regularly attended Sunday school classes. At that time, I was erroneously taught that those were the requirements of being a Christian. I had never heard the term "born again, blood-bought by Jesus' redeeming blood," or "having personal faith in the Son of God."

One week, during the community Bible study, we leaders were instructed to educate our small groups about asking Jesus into their hearts. I complied, educating them well according to my notes, but when I went home that afternoon, I realized I had never asked Jesus into my heart. Nor had I expressed that I wanted a righteous relationship with Him, to know all He had for me, or to walk the rest of my life hand in hand with Him.

At home that evening, I asked Him to be my Savior and live in me. Tears fell. I was His! And He was mine! At that moment, I became the Righteousness of God in Christ. I explored the Bible and saw scriptures of speaking in tongues, raising the dead, healing the sick, driving out demons, cleansing lepers, and freely teaching others. Could it be, Lord? Why didn't I know these

scriptures? I felt an insatiable need to delve in with a deep focus and study them immediately. I had so much to learn to fill this void in my heart and spirit.

The next day, I was alone in a room enjoying some special time singing to Jesus, telling Him how much I loved Him. Suddenly, my arms and hands raised up in praise, and a river of living water came gushing out of me. I hadn't asked for it, but knew it was Holy Spirit's supernatural gift. I spoke in tongues for over three hours straight. I was hardly able to breathe. The language poured out of me so quickly. I could hear myself speaking, but I was immersed completely in Him. I could not stop. The dam had been broken. Holy Spirit was real in my life. Tears from years of yearning were transformed into tears of joy, falling like a waterfall. What an incomparable, holy encounter!

I looked up, and a man with an intense bright light around him was walking towards me. It was Jesus! I had never seen Jesus before, but I knew Him and He knew me. He was Light! He was Love! The brilliance of the light He walked in penetrated deep into my inner being. I could feel His tangible love!

As He came to me, His eyes of intense, piercing love focused on mine. He smiled. My heart leaped, and my legs buckled. I leaned into His chest and cried. It was okay with Him. He wrapped His arm around me. It seemed that an inexhaustible supply of true, unconditional, divine love began consuming every part of my being. Jesus was confirming the truth that He Himself is holy, God's Son of unparalleled love.

Speaking to Jesus with my deepest feelings, I communicated, "Jesus, please don't let Your Presence leave." Jesus smiled a gentle, compassionate, reassuring smile.

During a morning walk later that week, I saw a house with a man sitting in a chair watching the morning sunrise from his picture window. I waved a 'good morning' to him and kept

walking. Immediately, I heard the audible words “Do not pass me by. Come and sup with me.” What? Who uses language like that? Turning around to look at the man again, I unmistakably realized it was Jesus sitting by the window. He knew my walk would take me past Him. I felt the gentle nudge of Holy Spirit and heard in my spirit, “He has great spiritual adventures ahead for you!”

Because of LOVE Himself, I have a beautiful relationship with Jesus, Holy Spirit, and Papa God (my endearing name for Him). He continues to share greater revelation of who He is and who I am in Him. Our possibilities together are endless. Papa God has me on awesome journeys in the supernatural realm, participating with Jesus, Holy Spirit, and His angelic host, bringing full understanding that I am truly a spiritual being filled with His supernatural power and authority because of Jesus. The unseen is the superior realm; the seen is only temporal. I live, move, and have my being in Him!

Jesus came to me one day before I knew how to ask, and let me encounter Him personally. He has given LOVE its true, pure definition. He continues to transform my life through His goodness and His vision for me. I am forever grateful to be living in a cherished, eternal relationship with the One who is Divine Love . 

Scripture Meditation:

Ephesians 3:14-21 NIV

For this reason, I kneel before the Father, from whom every family in heaven and on earth derives its name. I pray that out of His glorious riches He may strengthen you with power through His Spirit in your inner being, so that Christ may dwell in your hearts through faith. And I pray that you, being rooted and established in love, may have power,

together with all the Lord's holy people, to grasp how wide and long and high and deep is the love of Christ, and to know this love that surpasses knowledge; that you may be filled to the measure of all the fullness of God.

Now to Him who is able to do immeasurably more than all we ask or imagine, according to His power that is at work within us, to Him be glory in the church and in Christ Jesus throughout all generations, forever and ever! Amen.

And now, a sample of Margie Moormann's book, "*Angels Sing, But Do They Dance?*" — included here with her permission:

AN INCREDIBLE ENCOUNTER OF DIVINE LOVE

Most of All Love



My favorite comfy chair wraps its cushions around me. It is the perfect time for communion with Jesus. Gratitude sweeps through my spirit as I worship Him. I feel a gentle touch on my hand. Jesus also loves communing with me, yet the energy in the touch indicates it's an Angel saying, "Come with me. Here we go."

With my eyes closed, I yield to His words. Time stands still. I sense the atmosphere has changed and open my eyes to see I am in an enormous cathedral. It is much larger than photos I've seen of St Paul's Cathedral or Westminster Abbey in London. Where am I? The location doesn't matter; I am just being shown how immense this cathedral is. Hundreds upon hundreds of worshipers can be seated, I tell myself, noticing the almost endless rows of pews in

the sanctuary.

The angel directs me to an aisle seat close to the back. The pews fill up with people quietly anticipating something unique.

Studying the details and the beauty of the interior of this cathedral takes my breath away. It is magnificent! Gold shimmers as glorious bright lights flash throughout the massive space. I want to reach out and hold in my hands the tangible, thick light. This must be a very special occasion.

I hear whispers from the people behind me. Turning to look towards the entrance to the sanctuary, I see a father walking his gorgeous bride down the aisle. Thank You, Holy Spirit, for bringing me to witness a ceremony of profound love!

As the father and bride walk towards the waiting groom, people are putting their hands on their hearts. Astounded, guests gasp seeing the bride. Each is declaring emphatically, "Oh! That's me! The bride looks just like me!"

Light radiates from the bride as she and her father approach my aisle. I'm aware of her exquisite beauty and the love her father has for his daughter. She is not walking with her arm through his, nor are they hand in hand. He is holding her hand up in a position similar to the beginning of a waltz. The father-daughter dance has begun. I am looking at her beaming face, and I am astonished as I, too, recognize myself in her. "She is me!" I exclaim.

They continue walking towards the waiting groom. Only a few more steps. But just before the bride reaches her beloved, she stops and shouts out, "Wait! Please! I understand it now! There's more! Wait!" She turns and quickly moves down the aisle, exiting outside. Abruptly, I get up and follow her.

Once outside the cathedral, our eyes are opened to an unexpected sight. We both see many homeless, hungry, hurting people. The angelic being tells me they have always been there, completely unnoticed. With clear vision, I see people in deep

ditches, in gutters. Many are yelling, "Don't judge me!" Voices are crying out in agony from all over. Frantic ones pull at the bride's dress as she comes near them. Her dress is being shredded as they reach for a piece of what they perceive she has. Empathy rises within me as I feel the bride's compassion and love. I hear her tell the hungry people that food is prepared for each of them inside. She touches their heads with what seems to be power released from her hands. As she does so, their dirty, torn, foul-smelling clothes change to radiant, shining, fresh garments. Eagerly, they head inside the cathedral to eat a much-needed meal.

The bride walks toward a steep hillside, her feet slipping down into a deep, dark abyss with dense, tangled undergrowth. I am with her, understanding the mission that has overtaken her. Countless despondent people are caught in the undergrowth, groping to find something to hang on to that will pull them up, but to no avail. They are too weak, unable to get to the light above on their own. These living souls are barely surviving in the dark blackness. They are not even able to cry.

Pulling one unrecognizable body up the hill and placing this person of amazing value and worth in a safe place, she is determined and yells, "Help me!"

Wedding guests begin to vacate the cathedral. Soon, the building is emptied. Guests have responded to her call. Her groom appears at the door smiling broadly, acknowledging that he knew in advance this was going to happen.

Feeling empowered, I link arms with the bride. Others link arms, connecting us all with each other. We are now *one* with the bride. She becomes larger as we bond as one, each of us knowing the assignment we are called to complete.

Our unified body is so large that in one step, we lower ourselves to the dark chasm below. Six people at a time are being rescued. Working diligently, we breathe a breath of thanksgiving

as all who were once in the pit are now lifted up into the light.

More curious people arrive. They react to the rescued ones before them, holding them, loving them, affirming them.

Wedding caterers with their hands and arms full, bring the entire elaborate meal outside, arranging it on the ground to serve all who have congregated. Those who were radically transformed are now serving others.

Everyone has joyfully settled, sensing a calm that has now replaced the chaos. We are all in awe as we eat together, nourished at the makeshift banqueting table. I witness an amazing phenomenon happening. The sky is ablaze with a spectrum of vibrant colors. All eyes look upward. All ears hear the joyful singing and celebrating as angelic voices respond to what has occurred.

The air feels cool. Small, gentle raindrops fall on those who were downtrodden, broken, hopeless, and alienated. Their heads are now lifted high, arms extended to the heavens. They have been completely restored. Uninhibited, as if scenery and people had dissolved, they break into dance.

The oil of gladness has been poured out. Jubilation has replaced despair. God's heavenly messenger whispers that I am witnessing the manifestation of the Kingdom of God. We are indeed *one* body, united as the bride. He explains that together we have become a company of billions around the world.

"Look what I found!" someone excitedly yells, as they drag behind them an enormous, weighty sign with the letters L.O.V.E. All are excited and grab an edge of the sign. On the count of one... two...three, we toss it into the air. Up, up it goes. Gravity is not even pulling it down. Angels must be holding the sign. It has taken over the sky. All of creation must be able to see it!

My attention is drawn to the father of the bride, who has been standing back, observing all that has taken place. A brilliant

spotlight of gold shines on him. His awesome love, pride, joy, and adoration of his daughter permeate the atmosphere as he walks towards his daughter.

Everyone is watching as he gives his daughter a gentle hug, kisses her sweetly on her cheek, and with strong, penetrating emotion in his voice, he announces for all to hear, "THAT'S MY GIRL!"

We come together, unified in His Spirit and know that Papa God is saying, "And most of all, Love." My awesome experience is over. I'm back home with my heart and spirit full.

"Now you are the body of Christ, and each one of you is a part of it" — 1 Corinthians 12:27 NIV

"...as a bridegroom rejoices over his bride, so will your God rejoice over you" — Isaiah 62:5 NIV

ACTIVATION:

- Have you heard the call for help and answered it?
- If so, recall the experience and write about it.
- If not, was there a time when you wished you had?
- What emotions rise within you in both instances?

Prayer: *Lord God, may I know and experience my worth and value in You. Allow me to feel Your passionate love that beams with pride for me.*

“The LORD your God is in your midst, a mighty one who will save; he will rejoice over you with gladness; he will quiet you by his love; he will exult over you with loud singing.” — Zephaniah 3:17 ESV

“He will dance with shouts of joy for you.” — Zephaniah 3:17 Jerusalem Bible

“Dance With Me”

Chapter Thirteen

Isn't it interesting that “growing up” as a follower of Christ actually means growing more childlike? Here is how Scripture puts it:

“Learn this well: Unless you dramatically change your way of thinking and become teachable, and learn about heaven's kingdom realm with the wide-eyed wonder of a child, you will never be able to enter in. Whoever continually humbles himself to become like this gentle child is the greatest one in heaven's kingdom realm.” ~ Jesus, Matthew 18:3-4 TPT

Childlike faith seems to be the theme and hallmark of those who walk with and experience Jesus. I recall a quote by G. K. Chesterson:

“Because children have abounding vitality, because they are in spirit fierce and free, therefore they want things repeated and unchanged. They always say, “Do it again,” and the grown-up person does it again until he is nearly dead. For

grown-up people are not strong enough to exult in monotony. But perhaps God is strong enough to exult in monotony. It is possible that God says every morning, "Do it again," to the sun, and every evening, "Do it again," to the moon. It may not be automatic necessity that makes all daisies alike; it may be that God makes every daisy separately, but has never gotten tired of making them. Could it be that He has the eternal appetite of infancy; for we have sinned and grown old, and our Father is younger than we." — G. K. Chesterton, *Orthodoxy*

Lisa Perna possesses the kind of childlike spirit and deep relationship with Jesus that is beautiful to see. Host of the podcast *Touched By Prayer*,³² and author of the book *Touching the Father's Heart Through Prayer*, Lisa has an infectious wonder and joy about her Savior, the person of Jesus. When I interviewed Lisa on Sozo Talk Radio, she shared how she met Jesus face-to-face and even danced with Him!

Enjoy reading Lisa Perna's exhilarating encounter with Jesus in her own words:

I am such a huge fan of the show "Dancing with the Stars." I have watched it for many years and loved every minute of it. There is something so magical as the couples intertwine on the dance floor, weaving a tapestry of movement.

My love of dance began as a child. My mother took my sister and me to dance lessons every Saturday until my pre-teen years. Whenever we would visit my grandparents, the polka music would be playing in the background. Without hesitation, I would

³² Lisa Perna lives in New Jersey and conducts Daddy's Girl conferences. Connect with Lisa via her website www.touchedbyprayer.com or search for Touched By Prayer on facebook.

grab my younger sister and begin spinning her around the living room.

The 70s introduced me to disco dancing. My girlfriends and I would practice for hours. We imitated the latest dance moves we learned from watching “American Bandstand” or “Soul Train.” In my twenties, alternative and club music kept my feet moving. We would dance so much that it was like a workout. It wasn’t until I was twenty-five that I would discover my favorite dance, the waltz.

My brother’s wife had been a dancer in a Vermont dance troupe called “The Green Mountain Volunteers.” They were hosting a dance for peace which I attended. This was my first contra dance. Contra Dancing is kind of like an old-fashioned barn dance with polkas, contra/square dancing, and the waltz.

The best dancer there was Ted, an older gentleman in his late 60s. He was also a part of the dance troupe. I watched Ted the whole night; he was an amazing dancer. At the end of the night, the band began to play the final song, a waltz. Ted approached me with his hand extended. He asked, “May I have this dance?” I nodded yes, and he escorted me to the dance floor. I sheepishly told him that I had never waltzed before. His reply still brings a smile to my face. He said “I’ve watched you all night, and you dance beautifully. You are a natural, just follow my lead.”

I grabbed his hand and off we went. It was like my feet just knew where to go. I could feel his arms moving me and directing me as we spun around the dance floor. When the dance finished, Ted bowed and said, “I knew you could waltz!” With a kiss on my hand and a wink of his eye, Ted walked away.

There is something so beautiful and intimate that is shared in a dance. That one dance will forever bring a smile to my face. Since then, I’ve danced at weddings, including my own, but I didn’t waltz. The next time I would, well *that* dance experience would

forever change me.

One night, I was in worship at a church. The atmosphere was just in that sweet place where you become one with the music. My natural eyes were closed as I prayed and worshiped. I began to open up my spiritual eyes, and I immediately felt the presence of Jesus. I knew He was standing next to me. Suddenly, I imagined that He bent over and kissed my cheek. Giddiness took over as I tried to shake off the thought of Jesus ever giving *me* a kiss!

I began to push in deeper with my spiritual eyes. I wanted to experience everything that having a relationship with the Almighty God gave me. I wanted to allow Holy Spirit to show me a world where the impossible becomes possible. As the darkness of this earthly plane began to disappear, it gave light to another dimension. Slowly, I began to see something coming into focus and realized it was a ballroom.

I saw Jesus in the center, and then He began walking towards me. I could see a big smile on His face as He was coming closer. Now, this is the first time I really saw Him fully! In the past, I could only see him from the neck down. He reached for my hand, gently pulling me closer to Him, and then I heard Him whisper into my ear, "Dance with Me!" 

I could see Him putting His hand out to take mine. Then, like in a movie, I felt His hand pull me even closer. I could feel His other hand resting on my lower back. I could hear the music in the church playing in the background. My body was still present in the real world, but my spirit was engaging in the reality of this encounter. I could feel that my spirit was drawing me deeper into this beautiful vision. The music slowly changed into one of my favorite worship songs, "Good Good Father." It was the perfect song for this special dance!

Jesus was the groom, and I was His bride! We floated on the dance floor. It was effortless. I could feel myself lowering my eyes

as I felt not fit to dance with The King of Kings and Lord of Lords! I could see the hairs of His chest glimmering with a golden light beneath His white robe. The emotions began to overwhelm me. How could I look up? I wasn't worthy to see My King and all His Glory!

Jesus must have felt my unworthiness because we stopped dancing. For a brief moment, time just stopped. My breath quickened as I could feel His hands pick up my chin to look at His face! I was taking in all His beauty and splendor. The Groom wanted His bride to see Him fully as He is. Nothing was hindering my vision this time!

I looked hard and deep into those eyes that pierced my soul. My mind was shouting, "Look at His eyes, the color of His eyes... remember them." People who had encounters with Jesus always talked about the color of His eyes. I saw His eye color change from the deepest blue to the softest green and then back to blue. My heart was bursting through my chest as I was trying to decipher the color, when suddenly I knew the color. It was love! The color of His eyes is LOVE!

I decided to let go and allowed this vision to be more than just dream-like, but a real encounter! I was dancing with My Jesus! My greatest love and my best friend!

We twirled on the dance floor, and I could see Jesus throwing back His head in laughter, His hair glistening with light and golden flecks. We both started laughing and smiling as we spun around. We were having fun just being together. No pressure, no performance. Our dance was a celebration of finally coming together and meeting each other face-to-face.

This was more than just a dance for me, but a dance for His bride (the church). He wanted her to feel loved and safe. He wanted her to let go and allow Him to lead her through the intricate spins and turns of life.

Jesus began to speak into my ear about this dance! He said, "Lisa, if you have a strong partner to lead you, than the dance is smooth and beautiful. The lead dancer will take control and guide the other with ease and grace." He went on to say, "If the partner will not submit to the lead dancer, then it's pure chaos. The movements will be jerky and not fluid. There will be confusion about which way to go, and inevitably, the dance will come to an abrupt halt. The partners will become frustrated, and the dance will have to stop."

I felt His sadness as this revelation took hold of my heart.

Jesus continued His lesson, "You see, Lisa, waltzing is the same as your walk with me. You are My beautiful bride. I want to twirl you on the dance floor. At times, you, the bride, will fight to be the leader. You will want to control the way to go and when to turn.

I AM The Groom and I will always try to show you that you can trust Me, but because of hurts and disappointments, you won't give Me the control. There are times that you do give me control, and then, we can dance."

Jesus continued, "There is so much joy that is released when we dance together. You feel beautiful and loved. It's a dance of power, surrender, and trust. It's filled with joy and complete agreement of who is leading. That dance is effortless! All you have to do is just allow me to lead!"

This completely blew my mind, and yet it made perfect sense.

Jesus wasn't trying to be anything other than a good dance partner. He wanted to show me how beautiful partnering with Him could be. He showed me in a language I could understand, in a waltz... and I finally got it!

Then, in an instant, the vision was gone. I sat there perplexed at what had just happened. It made so much sense. It seemed so real.

I was about to dismiss it as my imagination running away with me when this woman approached me. She looked at me and began

to speak, “Hi, I’m Marie, and I didn’t want to bother you during worship. I just need to tell you that I saw Jesus standing next to you, and then He bent over and gave you the sweetest kiss on the cheek.”

I was floored! I began crying, telling her what just happened and knowing that Jesus showed Marie, so I would know it really happened.

Since that encounter, I have met many women who have had the honor of dancing with Jesus. Each experience I heard was so unique and personal. The one thing that is common, and all the women agree, is that He is a great dancer!

So, now I ask you the same question that Jesus asked me: “Do you want to dance?”

If you do, then all you have to do is let go of your control and give it to Him. He is coming for His beautiful bride and that’s **YOU!**

Now, just take His hand and let Him lead you in your dance of life!

“There is no fear in love. But perfect love drives out fear...”
—1 John 4:18 NIV

“You Can Never Escape My Love”

Chapter Fourteen

“Hi Daniel!”

I still can hear his voice and see his smiling face as I picture the scene in my mind’s eye, the day I met Carey Wacker in the foyer of Elevation Church at a prophecy conference. I was intrigued. “Have we met before?” I asked him. He told me that he had been enjoying episodes of Sozo Talk Radio on a recent road trip.

Since our first meeting that day, I am happy to report that we have become good friends. We meet from time to time to drink coffee and pray, sometimes even praying in tongues. I have learned much from him, especially about what matters most and to stay present in the moment.

When I interviewed him about how he met Jesus, I asked him if I could include it in this book. The following is Carey’s story in his own words:

It wasn't until a few years ago that I realized when people talked about meeting Jesus, that they didn't mean they had actually met him. For them, it was a figure of speech. When I would share *my* experience, I would get the strangest reactions. My wife finally told me that I made people feel uncomfortable.

I grew up without any church experience at all. My family didn't talk about anything religious. We didn't visit churches. My parents both died when I was little, and my grandmother raised

me and my siblings. By the time I was a teen, I had decided that there was no God and lived my life accordingly.

I wasn't a bad person. I simply lived my life how I wanted others to treat me. I grew into adulthood and, after different conversations, decided that I was agnostic and would tell anyone that asked that this was how I felt.

I moved to Colorado from Illinois at the age of eighteen. After a couple of years, I went into business with a friend. We spent time talking about spiritual things, and during one of those conversations, he dared me to read the Bible. I started reading it from the beginning straight through. It took me about three years before I came to the Gospel of Luke. I was not trying to find Jesus. I was actually trying to prove that the Bible was full of inconsistencies and, therefore, not true.

One night, I was reading the Gospel of Luke alone on the couch in my living room. I don't even remember exactly what I was reading. All of a sudden, my living room filled with the brightest, radiant, pure white light! Like phosphorus burning bright, the light was completely engulfing.

I was astonished and completely freaked out! The presence of Jesus was so powerful, I leaned forward and dropped to my knees. A peace surrounded me that was breathtaking. I saw Jesus! He smiled, and from his being emanated a fullness of love and peace that is beyond anything we can know on earth. It seemed as though I was taken into a heavenly realm. I possessed an overwhelming knowing that in this place, there is only peace. There were no controversies. Everything was good. Everything was pure.

Before my encounter with Jesus, I had all of these big questions about our lives. I was angry and skeptical that anything had any meaning. I thought there was so much to ask. I had questions about everything, all the hurts of the world and the hurts in our

lives. How could things be so bad when there was supposedly this loving God? How could there be such atrocities, pain, and suffering?

In the presence of Jesus, all at once, I knew that none of my questions were true or even mattered. I couldn't even ask a negative question because there was no negative there. In that environment, I lost my ability to even connect with anything that could be negative.

We don't have words to express this total truth of God's kingdom. In his kingdom, there are no wants or needs or suffering or anything that we experience here. In his kingdom, there is only peace and joy about everything, all the time. It is totally awesome! In his kingdom, it is so good, our experience here isn't worth remembering.

It seemed like there were people walking around in this place, not paying attention to us at all, but just walking in that same Oneness. Everybody was there for the same reason. Everyone was working in this whole truth, this complete Oneness.

Jesus said, "Carey, I love you. I have always loved you. There is nothing you could do to get away from my love, EVER." (*I am totally bawling right now as I write this, it's so awesome!*)

His words were final, the end, finite, complete. I was mesmerized, enveloped in complete love, peace, and truth. Jesus told me, still smiling, unshaken, and completely in power, that he knew me and all about me. He knew my past, he knew me now, he even knew my future, and that I was his. I wanted more than anything to spend forever in that place, more than anything I have ever wanted ...ever.

"You are mine," Jesus said.

"But what about all of the bad things that I have done?" I asked.

He just smiled this smile that was so unmoved and loving, like

the love that you feel when you're a young child from your mother, but times infinity. He shook his head with his smile and said, "But you are mine. I love you. I've been with you the whole time."

It was an indescribable love. His love embraced me, and there was no hint of fear. I felt that I was a part of him.

I asked, "But, what about all the bad things I am currently doing? This isn't what the world considers good."

"But you are good."

"But what about the bad things I will do in the future?"

Jesus replied, "I know you and I love you and you can't get away. You can never escape my love. You are mine. I've known you from the beginning, and I have seen your end. I know you. I love you."

It was a wonderful experience to know that I was not only forgiven for my past, but also for my future. There was no shame, no guilt for my future or my past. It really wasn't even up to me to earn forgiveness.

Jesus said, "You can keep doing those things, but it's just going to be harder on you. Or, you can go ahead and let go, surrender over to my goodness, and the rest of your life will be easier."

I realized my surrender wasn't a prerequisite to this grace. By his responses, I knew that none of those things, my "sins", were important. I got the impression that most of the things we think are bad are actually not what he defines as bad and are of no consequence. Also, most of the things we think are so important have no importance in his kingdom.

There's nothing we can do that affects the truth God has firmly established. We can walk into the future with God's peace. I know now that we are going to a place that is so unbelievably awesome! It's beyond unbelievably awesome!

When the experience was over, I found myself on the floor

sobbing uncontrollably for the next couple of hours. It was the best experience I could ever have had. If you want to experience Jesus as I have, just ask! God will reveal himself. Jesus will show up!

Soon after this experience, I decided I'd better start going to church. I had met my wife shortly before my encounter. We were dating at the time, and I knew she went to church. So I started going with her. I told her that I had met Jesus and never really shared my experience with her since she said she had too. I thought everyone who said they met Jesus had a similar experience. It was only until years later, when I actually shared the story with a friend and the friend said it was not his experience at all, that I realized mine was different.

About two weeks after going to a charismatic church, I told my wife that the church didn't seem like they were talking about the same Jesus I had met. They spoke about all of these things we had to do to be a Christian. Jesus didn't mention these at all. I don't mean that in a negative way, but the way church framed things, it sure seemed a lot harder than just knowing and following Jesus. At the time, I figured that they knew better than me, so I began to try "being a Christian" like they taught.

Without realizing it, and because it was quite normal in church, I became an ugly, judgmental jerk. No better way to say it. I was outspoken in how people should live and act, and be, and turned many people off "with the love of Jesus". I feel bad about saying that, but I am a little saddened because after meeting Jesus, I knew better.

I have now come full circle and am back to the place I started the night I met him. I really wish I hadn't taken that long trip away, but I guess that was my path. Throughout this path, I did see him in small, little snippets. Funny thing, though, it wasn't often at church. Whenever I see him, sometimes in nature, in people's actions, or in people's words, I am completely drawn to him. It's

like being in the kingdom presence on that night I met him all over again. I totally recognize it. I probably sound boastful, but that is not how I mean it. I just know what I know, and it is good.

I want to encourage you in the message of Grace in Christ. It is not stressed enough by Christians. We say it, but then act like it isn't true. Jesus paid it all up front. We just need to walk in the park freely and quit trying to earn what is already finished.

Laugh, Love, Grace, and Peace! (Total word picture of Jesus!)

Carey Wacker

“You are the light of the world—like a city on a hilltop that cannot be hidden. No one lights a lamp and then puts it under a basket. Instead, a lamp is placed on a stand, where it gives light to everyone in the house. In the same way, let your good deeds shine out for all to see, so that everyone will praise your heavenly Father. — Matthew 5:14-16 NLT

“The world’s a hungry place. A dark place. Maybe there’s more of them, or things like them, or worse, but there are more people like you too. People who stand. I told you when I first met you, I told you that you should hide. That you should keep your head down. Keep your shine out of sight. But I was wrong. Shine on, Abra Stone. You shine on.”
— from *Dr. Sleep*, sequel of *The Shining*³³

The Shining

Chapter Fifteen

Jesus makes a powerful identity statement about you when he says, “You are the light of the world.” This is worthy of much reflection. The following is a dream my friend Carey shares in which God revealed the truth of our shining:

The dream begins with me a small child. I was so bright and full of life. A super bright light shone out from me like a phosphorus white explosion!

³³ For the love of God and all that is holy, please do NOT take this as the slightest suggestion to watch this trauma inducing nightmare of a movie.

Everything was joy and peace, and there was no resistance to my whole being spreading the light and power as far as that light and power could radiate. It was as though I was meant to be this great, powerful, creative force on earth. Really beautiful and peaceful.

All was totally awesome until these words or thoughts came falling down on me. It was like a mixture of mist and dust. They were thoughts, but I could also hear words.

While this was happening, I was growing bigger and older. As time went on, this misty dust kept accumulating and getting thicker and thicker. The coating started hardening into a crust, a sandy dried mud; it was like a cornmeal coating on deep-fried food.

This crust encapsulated me, and my light, that I had as a child was no longer visible through this coating. Now, fully grown inside of this shell, I couldn't even remember that bright light or that it was ever there. I became aware of people all around me. All of the people had the same coating that was on me, so it felt normal.

When I began to notice that some of the people had cracks in their coating and a brilliant light emanated out from the cracks, I remembered being that small child who glowed bright. I remembered how it felt to shine and let the light spread. I wanted so much to feel that again! I started moving and jumping and kicking inside the crust, but it wasn't cracking.

I tried to remember when this crust started accumulating on me. As I did so, I started hearing voices — curses, accusations, and condemnations — and saw how I had accepted them and agreed with them. My agreement with those voices hardened the dust that fell on me.

It was such an obvious realization, and I was so surprised that I had forgotten the light and the feeling of my shining! I was

shocked.

The message of our true Identity is so powerful. Knowing our Identity is the sledgehammer needed to break through the crust that holds back our light.

You are the light of the world! Shine on!

— Learning to Shine, Carey Wacker

God Melts Our Heart Of Stone

C. S. Lewis, in his novel *The Lion, The Witch, And The Wardrobe*, gives us an interesting metaphor for Christ in the character of Aslan the lion. The white witch Jadis had oppressed the land of Narnia for a hundred years and frequently turned those who opposed her into stone. Near the end of the book, Aslan comes to the courtyard of the witch's castle, which she had filled with stone statues.

Aslan quickly goes from one statue to the next. He breathes the breath of life into them, reviving them to their former glory. A boisterous cacophony of joyful sounds soon fills the courtyard as all the revived creatures gather around Aslan. All who had been revived were now given the task of finding any remaining lost and fallen throughout the castle. This sounds like a great job description for those who follow Jesus. In fact, God has told me that this is exactly what heaven is up to. Finding *all* who are lost and fallen.

The LORD describes the New Covenant as the removal of our heart of stone, and he gives us a tender responsive heart of flesh. This is what he says to Ezekiel:

“I will give them one heart, and put a new spirit within them. And I will take the heart of stone out of their flesh

and give them a heart of flesh.” Ezekiel 11:19 NASB

“I will give you a new heart, and I will put a new spirit in you. I will take out your stony, stubborn heart and give you a tender, responsive heart. And I will put my Spirit in you so that you will follow my decrees and be careful to obey my regulations.” Ezekiel 36:26-27 NLT

More Precious Than Gold

While working on this chapter, I came across the story of a gold Buddha statue in Thailand. Right before the Burmese invasion of 1767, monks had covered a golden statue of Buddha with stucco and decorative glass to conceal its true value. The monks were killed in the invasion, and the statue was ignored for nearly 200 years. It wasn’t until it was relocated in 1955 that some of the stucco chipped off, revealing the gold underneath. Its value at the time of this writing is somewhere around 250 million dollars.

How much more valuable are *you*! God reveals that your faith is *far* more precious than mere gold.

“So be truly glad. There is wonderful joy ahead, even though you must endure many trials for a little while. These trials will show that your faith is genuine. It is being tested as fire tests and purifies gold—though your faith is far more precious than mere gold. So when your faith remains strong through many trials, it will bring you much praise and glory and honor on the day when Jesus Christ is revealed to the whole world.” — 1 Peter 1:6-7 NLT

In my interview with Dr. Bruce Allen on Sozo Talk Radio, he spoke of an occasion when he stood before the Lord Jesus. Jesus tells him, “Take that garment off.” Bruce looks down at the shirt

he's wearing, and when he begins to open his shirt, all of a sudden, this light shines out and he jumps back in shock!

"What's that?" he asks Jesus.

Jesus once again says, "Take the garment off."

He removes the garment and stands there in awe, beholding that he is a being of light!

"Lord, what is this?" He asks.

Jesus replies, "That's the real you. You are light because I am light, and you are created in my image. You are an aspect of Creator Light ...*not* created light."

Jesus is restoring your true identity and your shining even now. His Word is the hammer that frees the gold of your faith from its worthless facade (Jeremiah 23:29). Jesus is committed to removing all our shame and any negative thing that hinders our shining. Most especially our fear.

I trust you will be moved, as I was, by the following quote from Marianne Williamson:

"What holds us back in our lives is our fear. And sometimes when you take a very close look, you find out that your fears are not exactly what you thought they were.

Our deepest fear is not that we are inadequate. Our deepest fear is that we are powerful beyond measure. It's our light, not our darkness, that most frightens us. We ask ourselves, 'Who am I to be brilliant, gorgeous, talented, fabulous?' But actually, who are you not to be?

You are a child of God. Your playing small doesn't serve the world. There's nothing enlightened about shrinking so that other people won't feel insecure around you. We are all meant to shine as children do.

We were born to make manifest the glory of God that is within us. It's not just in some of us. It's in all of us. And as we let our own light shine, we subconsciously give other people permission to do the same. As we are liberated from our own fear, our presence automatically liberates others.

So it's holy work to move past your own fear. It doesn't just help you, it helps the world."

Will you join me in this holy work of overcoming our fears? I would propose that much of our shell, the coating of lies and accusations, is rooted in shame and fear. Fear is learned here. It is not something we are born with. Fear is love's opposite. Fear is the frequency of "hell" and leads to suffering. God's perfect love drives out all fear.

"There is no fear in love; but perfect love casts out fear, because fear involves torment. But he who fears has not been made perfect in love." — 1 John 4:18 NKJV

One of the greatest breakthrough moments in my own Awakening occurred when I sincerely invited Jesus into my deepest fear. Won't you do the same?

ACTIVATION:

Take some time, get alone with God in a safe space where you won't be disturbed. This is a holy moment. Honor it. Put on some instrumental music. Dim the lights. Light a candle if you want. Take some time and connect with Jesus right now in the best way you know how. Ask Jesus to show you where you have agreed with the enemy's lies, accusations, and condemnations. Ask Jesus to remove all these lies, accusations, and condemnations.

Close your eyes and fix your mind's eye on Jesus, the Light of the world, and declare out loud:

"I reclaim my right to shine bright in Christ!"

Say it again... and again.

Now... if, and only if, the Lord leads you to do so, ask Jesus to reveal your deepest fear. Pause and give him the time and space to do what he does best.

Invite Jesus into your deepest fear. Go through any and all issues that come to mind and surrender them to the perfect love of Jesus that drives out all fear.

"Lord Jesus I submit to you my fear of _____"

Keep going over this prayer of submission until there is nothing left. Don't be afraid to cry. Deep emotion and tears can often heal us in deeper ways than you could possibly achieve by only solving the equations of the mind. Remember, God is committed to your continued healing far more than you are. You are made to shine, and *NOW* is your time to shine!

Jesus says, *"Your need for acceptance can make you invisible in this world. Don't let anything stand in the way of the light that shines through this form of YOU! Risk being seen in all of your glory! You are accepted in the Beloved! Shine on!"*

For the Holy Spirit makes God's fatherhood real to us as he whispers into our innermost being, "You are God's beloved child!" — Romans 8:16 TPT

"He has brought me to *his* banquet hall, And his banner over me is love." — Song of Songs 2:4 NASB

Ahava, His Banner is Love

Chapter Sixteen

When I met Philip Arron McKenzie, I knew I had found a kindred spirit. You are about to read a few of his encounters with Jesus, which are excerpts from Philip's writings. I encourage you to pick up a copy of his book, *Realms of the Miraculous*, for yourself. Within his book, you will enjoy many more spiritual experiences, revelations, and encounters with God.

When I interviewed Philip on my podcast, he confirmed many of my own experiences and revelations from Christ. Enjoy and be encouraged!

The Golden Cloud of God's Presence

In the morning, I stood in my living room and raised my hands to Jesus. My arms were spread out like wings. As I listened to the instrumental worship music, I could feel the Father's love wash over me from the top of my head downward. As I continued to thank and praise Jesus more, something began to happen that I had never experienced before. I began to lose strength in my legs. My heart became completely consumed with love. A brokenness

overwhelmed and consumed me with a greater revelation of his love, joy, and peace.

I found myself face-down on our carpet, weeping, thanking Jesus for saving me. My praises and thanksgiving suddenly went from English into a language I did not know. It sounded foreign to me, and my best guess is that it resembled Native American. All of a sudden, I opened my eyes and looked up to see a golden cloud coming from the family room into the living room where I was worshipping. The presence of God covered me in a warm embrace. I then heard the same voice I had heard a few days before say, "Arron, I am your Father. Because of your great love for me, I have revealed myself to you. I have created you for greatness. I will teach you through my Holy Spirit to reveal my heart to you, and in time to come, others will be awakened to my kingdom through you."

I remained face-down on the carpet in the middle of our living room for what seemed like minutes but turned out to be a few hours. I was lost inside Papa's heart, enjoying his goodness, acceptance, and love. After I regained my composure, I called up a friend who had brought me to church just a few weeks ago, where I discovered this relationship with Christ. I was excited to share with him what I just experienced.

"Hey, man! I have to tell you what happened to me! I was worshipping Jesus in my living room earlier this morning when all of a sudden I felt his presence come into the room and my praises turned into my heavenly language!"

To my astonishment, my friend told me, "Oh, dude, that wasn't God. That was the devil! We don't believe that! That wasn't God."

My heart sank. I knew with everything in me that I just experienced God.

"Will I see you at church on Sunday?" my friend asked.

I remembered that God had told me that he would teach me

through the power of the Holy Spirit.

“I can’t be in a place where the Holy Spirit is not welcomed,” I said.

I never did return to that church. I was not led to call the pastor or anyone else there. I knew I experienced Papa God, and no one was going to try to steal that from me.

I knew with everything in me that I was now adopted into his house as a son, chosen to live a life of radical love. But now I knew that not everyone would understand what I experienced.

Jesus Changing the Heart of His Church

One morning, as I was about to awake, Papa God kept me in a dream-like state and brought me in front of a massive red brick building. I walked into the main entrance and found myself inside an enormous warehouse. I scanned the room. On the left was a coffee/juice bar. On the right, there was a stage with bands playing to enthusiastic worshippers. The middle of the room was filled with tables and chairs. The back of the room had a movie theater and rooms for prayer.

As I looked about the rooms, Papa God spoke and said, “I am redeeming the airwaves and changing the heart of my church. She will be relevant in a time to come that will bring a great shaking. Many will fall away, however, those who stay close to my heart will be my Gideons that I will use in a movement that will usher in my Kingdom!”

I knew I was being shown something that was going to change the fabric of how church was done. I knew that I needed to stay as close to God as possible, and there was no turning back.

Meeting Jesus in Heaven

One winter morning, I lit a fire in our small wood stove. Every morning, I sought Papa God, desperate to hear what Papa God had for me. I grabbed my guitar and started to strum a few chords, singing out my affection for him. My hands became too cold to keep playing, so I turned on some deep worship music and stood next to the fire as I raised my hands in total abandonment to my Heavenly Father.

As the music grew more intense, I began to feel His presence come upon me. The more I surrendered my heart, the heavier His glory filled me. I began to weep and repent again for things I had said that had wounded my wife that were not from God's heart for her. Before I knew it, my spirit was taken up to a beautiful garden that had a river and a tall tree next to it. Under the tree, Jesus was standing with many people dressed in white robes who sat at his feet, listening intently to what he shared with them. He was not moving his lips in dialogue, but by the Spirit, he taught them. I thought to myself, 'Why am I not with them under the tree at His feet?' I wanted to be with my precious Jesus.

While in heaven, I stood some fifty feet away in a field as I watched Jesus share His heart with all these people I did not know. I somehow knew that they were all new to heaven, but so was I. Why was I not there among them? I asked Jesus why I was not among the others under the tree. I received no response and found myself back in my living room. What I perceived to be a twenty-minute trip to heaven turned out to be a three-hour journey. What was Jesus trying to show me?

The next morning, I experienced the same thing! I found myself once more in God's garden and saw Jesus teaching under the tree next to the river. My heart was still troubled, and I did not understand why I was not with Him under the tree along with the

others learning.

As I stood watching and listening, Jesus glanced my way and smiled. His fiery eyes of love burned into my spirit a peace that I needed in that moment. I needed to feel like I belonged. Before I knew it, I was back in my living room. The clock informed me that what I perceived to be a ten-minute journey had lasted nearly an hour. Throughout the day, I pondered my experience, asking Papa God to reveal why he wasn't allowing me to sit with the others.

The next morning, I followed the same routine in worship. I was back in God's garden. It was the same scene once more. In my spirit, I asked Jesus why I was not with Him there with the others. He shifted his attention to me and stared at me intently and said, "You do not need to be here, for you already know what I am teaching these ones. Look up my son. What do you see?" Jesus asked.

I looked up, and over me was a large banner with gold letters that read:

אהבה

I understood that this was the Hebrew word Ahava, which meant "Love". Just as the Scripture says, "His banner over me is love." (Song of Solomon 2:4)

Jesus said, "Now look around you."

When I looked to my left, standing alongside me were many beings of light. They glowed a brilliant, beautiful pale blue. I looked down at my own hands to see that I, too, was glowing blue. These beings stood in a half circle, staring straight ahead, shoulder to shoulder.

I did not understand. Then the Lord said, "You have been

brought to earth to bring a greater knowledge of my love and to prepare my church for my arrival. Standing with you are also ones who have been created to love as I love, though their assignments are different than yours. Each of you have a different assignment. Yours is to love. You have not understood because the enemy of the world does not want my love that you carry to open the hearts of men to the revelation of heaven that I gave you to carry. Love as I love you, and do not forget that I love you. Do not forget where you have come from, son."

My spirit came back to my body, and I found myself face-down with tears streaming down my face. I had been away for two hours. That morning, I began to understand many of the hurts and pains brought on by others, even my wife. I truly began to let go of past offenses and began to freely love.

I learned that the more I surrendered my heart to the love of the Father, the more his glory filled my heart, and I was free to love. Jesus was showing me who I was before he sent me to earth. He showed me that I knew him in a way that those whom he taught did not yet know.

Years later, while hosting a house of prayer meeting in Israel, I walks a really hip older lady who seemed to have a very fun, effervescent spirit about her. She looked at me intently and said, "I want to have coffee with you." I agreed, and a few days later, I showed up at her house for coffee. Her dog befriends me, who normally doesn't like strangers, and so with her dog on my lap and coffee in hand, she says to me, "Do you remember me?"

I thought for a moment and replied, "No. No, I don't, but I really like you. You're really fun and I love your spirit."

She went on to share her testimony and then told me, "The reason that I brought you here is that while you don't remember who I am, I remember who you are."

"Where did we meet?" I asked.

“Well, we met underneath a tree with Jesus while he was teaching people all dressed in white. You looked over at us.”

I just started to cry and shake. “You were there?” I asked.

“Yes, and I’ve met two others who were also there. You are the third one I’ve met.”

I was completely undone.

Communion With Jesus

On the first Sunday of the new year 2000, I was filled with a great expectation for God to come and move like never before. The worship that Sunday was glorious and pure and brought us into the throne room of the Lord.

While I was face-down in worship, I began to feel my spirit leave my body, just like the times in my living room. I released myself to be drawn up and taken to a place that I had known before. I arrived in a dark, candle-lit room. The stones looked ancient. I heard the echoing sounds of laughter in the distance. The echoes became clearer voices with the sounds of celebration.

I heard the sound of wooden cups clanking together in toasts. As I walked closer, the light grew brighter, and I could see men and women dressed in clothing from a bygone era. It resembled the times of Jesus. My attention was drawn to the head of the table.

There was Jesus. I knew him immediately. I know those eyes and that smile. My heart was flooded with an overwhelming love. Jesus held his humble wooden cup and said, “I truly say to you, before you eat this bread and drink this wine, repent of your ways and receive true salvation. Some of you are like calloused feet. You have walked with me and I with you, but your feet and hearts have become hardened. I tell you this: peel off the calluses so you can feel. Some of your calluses are thick. Peeling them off for some of you may leave you sore, but trust in me. The soreness, redness, and rawness will go away, and what will come will be new, tender

feet and hearts. I know your hearts... and I love you.”

Jesus turned and looked at me and smiled. I wept as His love communed with my spirit to a point where I could not contain the pure goodness that came from Him. I wanted to run over and hug Him, but I could not. I was there to witness what I heard and tell others.

In a flash, I was instantly back on the floor, face down at church. The service was over and everyone had left.

Worship is the key that brings us into the presence of the Lord.

Worship in Spirit and Truth

Did you notice how all of Arron’s encounters, and many of the other encounters with Jesus throughout this book, involve worship? Jesus said, “The time is coming—indeed it’s here now—when true worshipers will worship the Father in spirit and in truth. The Father is looking for those who will worship him that way. For God is Spirit, so those who worship him must worship in spirit and in truth.” (John 4:23-24 NLT)

What does it mean to worship God in spirit and in truth?

Let’s ask God together.

I have a hunch that your experience worshiping God in spirit and in truth will be as unique as you are. I would suggest that worship has everything to do with surrender. Surrender is *giving* oneself to God, and, as we have come to know, giving oneself to God... is to give oneself to love.

A passage in Romans speaks of our surrender to God as our reasonable response to his gift and is our spiritual act of worship, our genuine expression of worship.

“Beloved friends, what should be our proper response to God’s marvelous mercies? I encourage you to surrender yourselves to God to be his sacred, living sacrifices. And live in holiness, experiencing all that delights his heart. For this becomes your genuine expression of worship.” — Romans 12:1 TPT

*“How can I convey? Where do I begin?
Oh, what could I say, to One so worthy?
I offer you my soul, it seems such a meager thing
As a tribute to such LOVE, Yes, I worship”* 

Part “Deux”

I must warn you! ⚠️

Part Two of this book is *very* dramatic.

One could say that it is *intense* and *emotional*. 🙄

One could even say that it is even *better* than God
descending from heaven
and giving you a million dollars! 💰

You have to trust me.

It is brilliant.

As you read the following section, try putting on some instrumental music.

Let the Spirit lead you in your musical choice. Handpan, anyone?

Suggestion: St. Finnikin's album, “Monarch” (it's mostly instrumental)

Storming the Castle

Chapter Seventeen

Captain's Log, Stardate: 12282024

I awoke at 4:00 a.m. this morning to a scene from *The Princess Bride* playing out vividly in my mind of when Inigo, Fezzik, and Westley are “storming the castle”.

Inigo just gave Westley the miracle pill from Miracle Max to bring the “mostly dead” Westley back to life. No sooner had Inigo given Westley the chocolate-covered miracle pill than he woke up, still paralyzed, surrounded by two former enemies.

Westley: Who are you? Are we enemies? Why am I on this wall? Where is Buttercup?

Inigo Montoya: Let me explain... [pause] No, there is too much. Let me sum up. Buttercup is to marry Humperdinck in little less than half an hour. So all we have to do is get in, break up the wedding, steal the princess, make our escape... after I kill Count Rugen.

Westley: That doesn't leave much time for dilly-dallying.

Fezzik: You just wiggled your finger. That's wonderful!

Westley: I've always been a quick healer. What are our liabilities?

Inigo Montoya: There is but one working castle gate, and... [looks over the wall at the gate] and it is guarded by sixty men.

Westley: And our assets?

Inigo Montoya: Your brains, Fezzik's strength, my steel.

Soon, these three amigos put a plan into action. The giant Fezzik now stands in a wheelbarrow (*another one of their “assets”*) wearing a long black holocaust cloak (*another “asset” that Fezzik manifests out of thin air*) that extends to the ground. He appears to be levitating as he advances toward the sixty armed men, shouting threats, claiming to be the Dread Pirate Roberts. Inigo is struggling with the wheelbarrow while simultaneously also carrying the still-paralyzed Westley draped over his back.

Inigo asks Westley in a strained voice: “Now?”

Westley: “Not yet.”

Inigo (in a *very* strained voice): Now?”

Westley: “Light him.”

I interpreted all of this as Jesus’ funny way of saying, “Let’s go work on your book.”

“Light him!”

This was the phrase that Jesus highlighted to me first thing today. Am *I* the one being lit? And when? “Now?” I ask Jesus (in a *very* strained voice).

Is “now” the right time for this book to be written and released to the world? Is “now” the time for us to experience getting ‘lit’ with the fire  of God’s presence? Is “now” the time for Father to activate this sleeper cell (me) to administer to others the revelation God has given me? Is “now” the time to set the world ablaze with passionate love for our Savior?

How is it not always the right time, whether in season or out of season, to revel in the love of Jesus and the Good News of his salvation?

*Today is always the day of salvation.*³⁴

So here I am. Where do I begin? (*Okay, let's at least start with a cup of tea... I hope I still have eggnog to use as a creamer... SO yummy! Unfortunately, there is a cat on my lap. Do I disturb him? Man... it's now almost 5:00 am! It took me nearly an hour to research and write out that short scene from Princess Bride?!?*)

What can I say about our friendship, Jesus? This is the heart and soul of this book... *No pressure.* This could go a thousand different ways, and you want to start by referencing *The Princess Bride*?

Alrighty then...

(I went back to bed. It is now 8:43 am, and Jesus has just given me the answer. It is something he has been saying all along!)

Jesus wants to answer the deepest question of *your* heart.

What is the deepest question of *my* heart? I want to ask Jesus:

Am *I* important to you? Am *I* special to you? Am *I* your 'one out of a million'? In this metaphor of *The Princess Bride*, if you are Westley, am *I* (as part of the Church, the 'Bride' of Christ) your Buttercup? Do you like *me*? Do you want *me*? Do you love me? Am *I* someone you care for? What do *I* mean to you? What sort of relationship would you like to have with me? How close can our relationship and friendship be? How much closer *can* we be?

³⁴ Jesus had said to others, prior to his public ministry, "Now is not my time". He maintained this right up until Mary, his mother, "activated" him and gave us her last recorded words in Scripture: "Do whatever he tells you."

What does it look like to know you or experience you more fully than I currently am or ever have? Are *you* content with the level of relationship we have? Are we on track?

“Jesus, do you love *me*? Am I someone you would storm the castle for?”

I want to know the answer to these questions. Can you relate? Do you, dear reader, wrestle with questions like these:

“Jesus, do you love *me*? What do I mean to *you*?”

Have you ever longed to know that you matter as much to Jesus as Buttercup matters to Westley?

In the opening of the movie *The Princess Bride*, whenever Buttercup said to Westley, “Farm boy...” and asked him to do something, he would respond with, “As you wish,” and do whatever she asked. It was explained in the film that whenever he said, “As you wish,” what he was *really* saying was, “I love you”.

Months before sharing this movie with my children, I instituted a tradition in our house that my kids could ask me for anything, and if they said, “Farm boy,” I would immediately say, “As you wish,” and get whatever they wanted or do whatever they asked... *within reason, of course*.

The night finally came when my wife and I had the absolute joy of sharing this treasure of a film with our children as our ‘family movie night’ selection. As the movie played, I watched my kids and waited for them to make the connection and have that glorious realization that I had been saying, “I love you”, to them all along.

I have come to believe that Jesus says, “I love you”, to you and me in much the same way... by doing as *we* wish!

Jesus says to you and me:

“You may ask me for anything in my name, and I will do it.” — John 14:14 NIV

Farm boy Jesus is declaring his love to his Beloved with an “As you wish,” to your prayers. So, what are you, God’s Beloved, asking God for in prayer?

In other words:

What is Buttercup (you) asking Westley (Jesus) for?

Jesus has indicated a number of times that he is the kind of person who is interested in saying, “As you wish.”

I believe this about him. I think Jesus actually loves each and every one of us *more* than Westley loves Buttercup... if you can believe it. *You* are someone he would storm the castle for. You are someone he *did* storm the castle (*the gates of hell*) for.

What Do You Want?

Gotye wrote a song called *What Do You Want?* I think about this song when I recall the multiple times Jesus seems to ask us the question, “What do you want?” in the Gospel of John. Has his question ever stood out to *you*?

Jesus said:

“Truly, truly I say to you, if you ask the Father for anything in My name, He will give it to you... ask and you will receive, so that your joy may be made full.” — John 16:23,24 NASB

For the last few months, I have been putting these words of

Jesus into practice. My faith was tested immediately when, just after I asked for something of the Father in Jesus' name, the exact opposite happened... what a blow. It happened to be a trivial matter that I asked about... but what about next time, when it *really* mattered?

If you recall, Jesus taught a great deal about persistence in prayer. He teaches us that we have to 'ask and keep on asking'. God knows our perseverance in prayer is for our highest good.

So what are you asking Father for?

I'll tell you what I am asking for...

First and foremost, I continue to ask Father, in the Name of his precious only begotten Son, Jesus, to experience the intimate friendship with the Trinity. I want in. I want the entire world to look at me as an example of: "This is how God treats his friends."

I am asking Father, in the name of Jesus, for this book to be published and well-received. I ask Father, in the name of Jesus, for this book to be a blessing to all who read it. I ask Father, in the name of Jesus, for my brothers and sisters' lives to be forever impacted and changed for the better as they become deeply aware of how loved they are by Jesus and the One he calls 'Abba'... the One he introduces to us all as *our* heavenly Father.

If you *are* reading this, then Father answered his little boy's prayer. Jesus has said, "As you wish", to his Beloved, Daniel. Apparently, my request wasn't *too* outlandish.

Jesus had one prerequisite for me if he would help me with this book project. He wants me to tell the truth. But, it became clear to me that there are some secrets I ought to keep secret... that I *need* to keep secret. You are not privy to secrets you ought not to have

access to... secrets that you have no right to. There are some awe-inspiring secrets that you are simply not ready for... but there are some secrets that you *are* ready for.

Let's take a closer look at something Jesus has said:

"I have never called you "servants," because a master doesn't confide in his servants, and servants don't always understand what the master is doing. But I call you my most intimate friends, for I reveal to you everything that I've heard from my Father." — John 15:15 TPT

Can we now appreciate the significance of his blessing here? Can we revel in this status that Jesus has elevated us into? That Jesus would regard you and me as his friends?

God confides in his friends. God trusts his friends with the secrets of his heart. God has secrets for you!

"You are permitted to understand the secret (mystérion) of the Kingdom of God. But I use parables for everything I say to outsiders." — Mark 4:11 NLT

Ask: "Jesus, what secrets do you have for me right now?"
God invites you, his friend, to:

"Ask me and I will tell you remarkable secrets you do not know about things to come." — Jeremiah 33:3 NLT

The psalmist writes:

"The secret of the LORD is for those who fear Him, And He will make them know His covenant." — Psalm 25:14 NASB

How amazing is that? The LORD (*YHWH, I AM*) will share his "secret" with those who fear him, and he will reveal his covenant

to them. Some translations have rendered this verse, “the friendship of the LORD is for those who fear him.” (ESV)

What does it mean “to fear the LORD”? What is his “secret”? What is his covenant? All good questions. According to this verse, God will personally reveal all those answers to you who fear him.

I have heard some Bible teachers explain that the word for “fear of the LORD”, as the Bible uses it, means to “reverently trust” God. I like that. I like that word *trust*. Isn’t that an intimate word?

As a follower of Jesus, everything is available to you. No good thing does He withhold from those who walk uprightly! (Psalm 84:11) Every spiritual blessing in the heavenly realms is yours! (Ephesians 1) It is your Father’s good pleasure to give *you* the Kingdom! (Luke 12:32) You, too, can clearly hear the King, *your* Good Shepherd’s voice! (John 10)

ACTIVATION:

Bring to Jesus the deepest questions of your heart. Ask him and wait for the answer.

“But they that wait upon the Lord shall renew their strength; they shall mount up with wings as eagles; they shall run, and not be weary; and they shall walk, and not faint.” — Isaiah 40:31 KJV

Do you have a request of the Father or Jesus? What are you asking Father for in the name of Jesus?

Hear farm boy Jesus say: *“As you wish”*

“I have never called you “servants,” because a master doesn’t confide in his servants, and servants don’t always understand what the master is doing. But I call you my most intimate friends, for I reveal to you everything that I’ve heard from my Father.” — John 15:15 The Passion Translation

“if”

🌸 Chapter Eighteen 🌸

Of all the metaphors for our relationship with God in Scripture, the idea of friendship is one that I feel most drawn to. When I learned that I could be a friend of God, I was intrigued.

“I can be a friend of God?”

“Yes! Of course”, I hear the Divine reply, “What do you think you were created for? You are created to be my companions, my children, my family... my *friends*.”

There is a beautiful scene in the movie, *The Shack*³⁵, in which Mack sits at the table with Papa, Jesus, and Holy Spirit, enjoying a wonderful meal and conversation together. What a brilliant picture of the exquisite, deep, and lovely friendship that God desires to have with us.

Doesn't that capture your imagination? Don't you want that? I sure do!

I found my favorite Bible verse on the day I read the following:

“So now we can rejoice in our wonderful new relationship with God because our Lord Jesus Christ has made us friends of God.” — Romans 5:11 NLT

When I read this Scripture, it echoed the deepest desire of my heart — to experience friendship with God! I wanted to scoop the words off the page and plant them in my heart and make it my lived reality immediately. This verse was highlighted, circled, underlined, memorized, and shared with thousands of people at my concerts and YouTube broadcasts over the years.

Just to be considered Jesus' friend is a far cry from anything I could have *ever* imagined our relationship could be. Consider the fact that, according to Jesus, *the* greatest prophet who ever lived, John the baptizer, considered himself unworthy to even be considered Jesus' lowest slave — unworthy even to stoop to untie his sandal or even to wash his feet! Yet later, in the Gospel of John, we see Jesus stooping to wash his disciples' feet!? What is happening here?

Jesus said that the least in the Kingdom of heaven is greater than his G.O.A.T. (*greatest of all time*) prophet, John. Could it be that this is because God was about to bring every single one of his followers (*down to the least of them, according to Jesus*) into a deeper

³⁵ *The Shack* by Wm. Paul Young

level of intimacy than any prophet of God had ever experienced thus far?

The other John, the Gospel writer, referred to himself as “the disciple whom Jesus loves”. I suspect that John and Jesus experienced a B.F.F. (*best friends forever*) kind of relationship. They were close. Was John, the disciple, Jesus’ best mate?³⁶

If you recall, David and Jonathan were close friends and made a covenant of intimate friendship. The Scripture says, “Jonathan became one in spirit with David, and he loved him as himself... And Jonathan made a covenant with David because he loved him as himself. Jonathan took off the robe he was wearing and gave it to David, along with his tunic, and even his sword, his bow and his belt.” (1 Samuel 18:1-4 NIV)

David said of his relationship with Jonathan:

“I grieve for you, Jonathan my brother; you were very dear to me. Your love for me was wonderful, more wonderful than that of women.” — 2 Samuel 1:18 NIV

I think of Jesus and John having this kind of “David and Jonathan” kind of bond as well... a friendship of intimate love.

Is *this* the magnitude and intensity, the extent and degree of friendship that you and I are invited into with Yeshua? Are you and I *very* dear to Yeshua? Are you and I “the disciple whom Jesus loves”?

I believe the answer is a resounding, “Yes!”

I know this is true.

We all are in the gracious position of being the Beloved. We are

³⁶ I picked up that phrase, “best mate”, recently when I heard Jonathan Roumie, who plays Jesus in *The Chosen*, say that about Jesus in an interview. I love it! I have been calling Jesus my best mate ever since.

all in the graced position to *be* John (whose name means, “*I AM Favored*”) in this scenario... to be the disciple whom Jesus loves.

Please forgive me, but to set up the rest of the chapter, I must digress into my own “dark ages” concerning this reality of intimate friendship in what follows... so please, bear with me.

Did you notice how I began this chapter with a quote from John 15:15?

Just so you know, this verse was taken out of context!

Scripture *must* be read with the understanding of its entire context! So... we will first need to take the next 74 hours and 28 minutes and read the *whole* of sixty-six books of Scripture (more, if ya got a Catholic Bible) to properly understand the greater context that this verse sits in... go ahead... I will wait...

Okay... you're back!

<Why did I imagine the Jeopardy song playing for all this time? It is driving me crazy! But not to worry... I made the best of it. I created a musical album based on the Odes of Solomon. I wrote a Screenplay (always wanted to do that). And, I perfected an hour-long Comedy special... Methinks you must have taken a tad longer than 74+ hours.>

In all your reading, some of you may have noticed that John 15:14 comes *before* John 15:15. I know... it *sounds* obvious, but you would be surprised at how many obvious things we miss every single blooming day!

Let's talk about verse fourteen:

Jesus said, “You are my friends if you do what I command.”
— John 15:14 NLT

In my late teens, when I first read this verse, Jesus' "if" qualifier seemed to put the hope of friendship with him far out of reach for me to ever attain. That "if" always used to intimidate me. That huge:

"if"

seemed to disqualify me from *ever* being Jesus' friend.

Why do you think that is?

I will tell you why, as far as I was concerned. I read his "if" as if it were an 'impossible to pass' test of the heart. The story of Atreyu in the movie, *The NeverEnding Story*, comes to mind. While on his epic quest, Atreyu had to pass through a valley between two giant laser-eyed statues. These sentries would examine the heart of anyone trying to pass through, and if their hearts were not pure, they would vaporize them with lasers from their eyes. No one had *ever* survived this test... until Atreyu actually did... and just barely at that!

In my mind, at that time in my life, Atreyu may have represented Christ, but certainly *not* me. Jesus was worthy, but *I* was not. Religion had surely trained me to see myself in a perpetually fallen and disgraced position before God. Religion had me trained to fix my eyes upon myself and my ability to perform perfectly for God. I was convinced that my dream of friendship with Jesus was doomed. Friendship with God was reserved only

for that rare “one out of a billion” person who passed the test... like blameless Noah.

This feeling, this sense of imposed distance from God based on my poor performance, was further entrenched in my mind by the Scriptures when I, while sitting at a Burger King in Spokane, Washington, at the age of eighteen, read the following words of the Savior:

“And which of you, having a servant plowing or tending sheep, will say to him when he has come in from the field, ‘Come at once and sit down to eat’? But will he not rather say to him, ‘Prepare something for my supper, and gird yourself and serve me till I have eaten and drunk, and afterward you will eat and drink’? Does he thank that servant because he did the things that were commanded him? I think not. So likewise you, when you have done all those things which you are commanded, say, ‘We are unprofitable servants. We have done what was our duty to do.’ ” — Luke 17: 7-10 NKJV

“Does he *thank* that servant? I think not!” I imagine the Savior’s obvious disdain (in this *totally* hypothetical story) at the thought of pampering a slave with a false sense of entitlement by stooping so low as to express gratitude... and this, for a servant who is *actually* doing his job!

‘So’, I thought, ‘even if I were to do my duty for the Lord, *perfectly* obeying him in every respect, I still ought to consider myself an unworthy servant?’

Yep... this relationship is doomed. This is a taskmaster Jesus. I am not even a perfectly obedient servant. How could I be anything other than disqualified from being his “friend”?

Any time I heard the word “obey”, it just served to remind me

of our distance and further alienated me from the Lord in my own self-righteous religious self-rejection. The sentence of “disqualified” hung over my head, which led to a morose outlook on my “religious” life, and eventually led to a profound depression and malaise that robbed *all* joy from my life.

The pain of my disconnect from Jesus was *so* profound.

So... why did I feel the need to bring you through my own painful and depressing experience of how I experienced Jesus’ “if”?

Because Jesus is confronting something here. I want to be precise and accurate in relating everything he wants to say. What Jesus says to you and me will undo every obstacle to intimacy if we would receive it. There were many words I wrote that address you as if you were your own Savior... which, you are not.

Jesus, you have the floor.

Jesus (and I quote): *I want to address you as my most intimate friend. This is what my New Covenant has established you in... already. You have available to you the frequency of JOY, which is firmly embedded in the finished work concerning you. For you are “complete in Christ”. You are “accepted in the Beloved”. Yes, you have a wonderful new relationship with me and our Father. And it’s not your fault. You didn’t do anything.*

This is the free gift of eternal life. But many of you fail to grasp where this is going. I mentioned it already to Daniel (it’s also in the next chapter, and many chapters). The Song of Songs is “our” song. This is a “Divine Romance”. This is Christ the Groom becoming One with the Bride. You are that Bride. This is where this is going. Intimacy like you have never dreamed possible. Not to sit on my right hand or my left like James and John asked for... no... FAR closer!

Oneness.

You sit with me on my throne in me... and, as me.

So, a love relationship and Oneness are the whole point after all! I am reminded of Master Jesus' words of encouragement and warning to the Ephesian believers in John's book of Revelation:

"But I have this against you: you have abandoned the passionate love you had for me at the beginning. Think about how far you have fallen! Repent and do the works of love you did at first. I will come to you and remove your lampstand from its place of influence if you do not repent." - Revelation 2:4-5 TPT

What sort of religion or spirituality do we even have without a passionate love for the person of Jesus? Right!?! Without intimate love, *what* is the point?

Recall when Jesus asked Peter three times, "Do you love me?" Let's take a closer look at a clip from *that* story from the Gospel of John:

After breakfast, Jesus asked Simon Peter, "Simon son of John, do you love me more than these?"

"Yes, Lord," Peter replied, "you know I love you."

"Then feed my lambs," Jesus told him.

Jesus repeated the question: "Simon son of John, do you love me?"

"Yes, Lord," Peter said, "you know I love you."

"Then take care of my sheep," Jesus said.

A third time he asked him, "Simon son of John, do you love me?"

Peter was hurt that Jesus asked the question a third time. He said, "Lord, you know everything. You know that I love you."

Jesus said, "Then feed my sheep." — John 21:15-17 NLT

One of the things lost in translation in English here is the Greek words for *love* used in this conversation. Jesus starts by asking Peter, “Do you *agapaō* me?” What is Jesus saying by using *this* Greek word for love?

I am not a Greek scholar. I can only look up what the experts tell us about this word (and I have). It seems to me that there is a certain sort of other-centered, self-giving love going on with *agapaō*. This is a sacrificial love. We ought to do an extensive study through every verse in the Bible where this particular word *agapaō* shows up to get a working knowledge of the kind of love this speaks of. This is the kind of love that God so *loved* the world with that he *gave* his only begotten Son (John 3:16).

I discovered that the truth of the Gospel, the Good News, and the declaration of the New Covenant, are quite the opposite of what religion taught me. The Good News is a declaration to everyone willing to receive the message:

“*You* are my worthy one. My unconditional love for you makes *you* worthy!”

The first ones to receive the message and be welcomed with open arms by the Savior were the prostitutes and tax collectors. How would we render this reality in modern terms? The founding members of Yeshua’s church were porn stars and the mafia?

I think what Jesus is saying by the Galilean lakeshore to Peter by choosing the word *agapaō* is: “Peter, do you love me so much that you would die for me?”

Peter couldn’t admit, in and of himself, to owning that *agapaō* level of love for Yeshua, so he responds to Jesus’ question with a *different* word for love. He said, “You know that I *phileō* you.”

The Greek word *phileō* means “to be a friend to; to have

affection for”.

Perhaps Peter recognizes by now, at breakfast with Jesus on the shores of the Sea of Galilee, that the heart-testing sentries have already vaporized him (*Remember? From earlier?*). Peter’s *agapaō* love had been tested a few days prior at Jesus’ arrest and trial, and he had denied three times that he even knew Jesus. As the narrative informs us:

On the night of Jesus’ arrest, on the way to the Mount of Olives with his disciples... “Jesus told them, “Tonight all of you will desert me. For the Scriptures say,

‘God will strike the Shepherd, and the sheep of the flock will be scattered.’

But after I have been raised from the dead, I will go ahead of you to Galilee and meet you there.”

Peter declared, “Even if everyone else deserts you, I will never desert you.”

Jesus replied, “I tell you the truth, Peter—this very night, before the rooster crows, you will deny three times that you even know me.”

“No!” Peter insisted. “Even if I have to die with you, I will never deny you!” And all the other disciples vowed the same.” — Matthew 26:33-35 NLT

Later that same night:

“A servant girl noticed him in the firelight and began staring at him. Finally she said, “This man was one of Jesus’ followers!”

But Peter denied it. “Woman,” he said, “I don’t even know him!”

After a while someone else looked at him and said, “You must be one of them!”

“No, man, I’m not!” Peter retorted.

About an hour later someone else insisted, “This must be one of them, because he is a Galilean, too.”

But Peter said, “Man, I don’t know what you are talking about.” And immediately, while he was still speaking, the rooster crowed.

At that moment the Lord turned and looked at Peter. Suddenly, the Lord’s words flashed through Peter’s mind: “Before the rooster crows tomorrow morning, you will deny three times that you even know me.” And Peter left the courtyard, weeping bitterly.” —
Luke 22:56-62 NLT

The cock crowed, and Jesus locked eyes with Peter... at *that* precise moment. Talk about a confrontation of Peter’s diabolical pride, his religious ego, the hubris that so possessed him that he had boasted that he would die for Jesus earlier that very day!

I have to ask myself at this point, ‘Why am I being so hard on Peter’s strong sense of loyalty and devotion to Jesus that I would call it diabolical or pride or say it was all just a religious ego? How dare I! Why would I do that? It feels wrong. What more could you hope for out of any of us than the level of devotion that Peter displayed?’

Peter was the best of us! At least he was close enough to Jesus in his hour of need that he *could* lock eyes with him as the cock crowed. He stayed up all night with Jesus, remaining as close as he possibly could get to Jesus, even after being the one who lopped off an ear, nearly killing a man, in his attempt to defend Jesus from his arrestors. He was committed and dedicated... a better servant to Jesus than I’ve ever been! How dare I disparage his best efforts! Unless...

Unless Jesus wants to expose and dispense with Peter’s finest human efforts? Unless Jesus is exposing and dispensing with *my*

finest efforts? And *your* finest efforts? Does Jesus take offense at our finest efforts to please and serve him and say, “*That* was never the point. My grace and the free gift of our beautiful, intimate friendship *IS* the point! Not ‘*pleasing* me’. Not working for it.”

To obey the Gospel means to submit to the way God makes us right with himself... by trusting him. By receiving his gift. By grace through faith, and this, not of yourselves, it is a gift of God.

Jesus is now in Galilee, meeting with his disciples as he promised, and is merciless to Peter’s ego. He asks him a second time, “Do you *agapaō* me?”

To which Peter again responds, “ I *phileō* you”.

After each of Peter’s responses, Jesus commissions and entrusts Peter with the task of kingdom ministry: “Feed my lambs... take care of my sheep.”

Finally, Jesus asks Peter the third time: “Simon son of John, do you *phileō* me?”

Do you love me as a friend?

“Lord, you know everything. You know that I love you *as a friend*.”³⁷

It’s all I ever wanted.

OBEY

Jesus said in John 14:15, “If you love me, you will obey my commandments.” (NET)

³⁷ Immediately following this, Jesus told Peter that he would have the glorious honor of dying for him.

The word for love here is *agapaō*. What hope do we have, in and of ourselves, to “*agapaō*” Jesus any better than Peter did? The good news is:

You never have to be “in and of yourself” ever again!

God has not abandoned you! You are filled with *his* Spirit! You never were “in and of yourself”, separate from God in His Reality (ontologically). Separation existed only in your own broken paradigm... your own vain imagination. (Colossians 1:21)

The Good News is that *this* verse, John 14:15, follows with:

“Then I will ask the Father, and he will give you another Advocate to be with you forever – the Spirit of truth, whom the world cannot accept, because it does not see him or know him. But you know him, because he resides with you and will be in you. “I will not abandon you as orphans, I will come to you. In a little while the world will not see me any longer, but you will see me; because I live, you will live too. You will know at that time that I am in my Father and you are in me and I am in you. The person who has my commandments and obeys them is the one who loves me. The one who loves me will be loved by my Father, and I will love him and will reveal myself to him.” — John 14:16-21
NET

The word for Advocate here is the Greek word *Paraclete*, which is the Greek equivalent of the Hebrew word *Ezer*. *Ezer* means “helper, aid, and/or strength.” It carries the idea of doing for another what they cannot do for themselves. This is the same word God gave to the woman when God says of man in the creation account, “I will make a helper (*Ezer*) suitable for him”, and gave

him his significant other. The woman is man's Paraclete, his significant other. (*Incidentally, spellcheck demands that I capitalize Paraclete. Even the dictionary recognizes the Holiness of Paraclete, Holy Spirit.*)

The Spirit of Jesus, the Spirit of the Father, and the Oneness *you* share *in* them, *is* your significant other... and *he* is your salvation.

I once said in a dream, likely by the prompting and inspiration of the Holy Spirit:

"I think the One we are to marry is God."

As we will further explore in later chapters, it is this "marriage to God" and our Oneness with him that is the heart and soul and center of the Gospel as revealed in the Gospel of John! Have you read the Gospel of John?!

John chapter fourteen begins with marriage language!

"Don't worry or surrender to your fear. For you've believed in God, now trust and believe in me also. My Father's house has many dwelling places (*Or, "There are many resting places on the way to my Father's house", or, "There are many homes in my Father's household"*). If it were otherwise, I would tell you plainly, because I go to prepare a place for you. And when everything is ready, I will come back and take (*the Greek word for "take" here is "paralambano" — a word used for a Bridegroom who is coming to take his Bride*) you to myself so that you will be where I am. And you already know the way to the place where I'm going." — John 14:1-4
The Passion Translation (*with included footnotes*)

In Jewish culture, a betrothed groom would go and prepare a place for him and his bride to live. When the Father of the groom determined that everything was ready, the groom was sent, by the

Father, to receive his bride. *When* the groom comes to receive her, in this context, is a complete mystery and surprise to the Bride.

Hence, the suspense of how the ultimate fulfillment of the New Covenant will play out as presented by Scripture. When will Jesus return for us? When will he establish his kingdom on earth? The apostles believed it could happen in their lifetime... as has every generation since. How brilliant!

Guess what? He has!

The kingdom of Jesus is here on earth in you and in me when we live in the truth of our Oneness with God. (If you have questions about this and want to read more, stay tuned for the next chapters: *Merging into God*, *Our Mystical Union*, and *Partakers of the Divine Nature*.)

And yet, how brilliant and wise God has been to keep humanity in suspense, generation after generation, as he rolls out his kingdom, as we witness the increase of his government and peace, of which there shall be no end!

So... back to the subject of obedience. Are we now less intimidated by this “prerequisite” to friendship with Jesus? At the beginning of John fourteen, we learned that to ‘obey the Gospel’ means to trust and believe in Jesus. This is the *only* “work” that God requires of us. (Jesus said that earlier.) As we do this, we enter a betrothal agreement with Jesus, our Groom. We become the Bride of Christ.

As we obey the Gospel, by trusting Jesus, he gives us our “engagement ring”, the promised Holy Spirit (Ephesians 1). He is our Paraclete, the Holy Spirit, who *is* the very presence of Jesus and the Father who comes and makes their home in you, which, incidentally, *is* the power, the ability, to perform all that God requires of us (to trust and love God):

“Loving me empowers you to obey my word. And my Father will love you so deeply that we will come to you and make you our dwelling place. But those who don’t love me will not obey my words. The Father did not send me to speak my own revelation, but the words of my Father.” — John 14:23-24 TPT

Jesus told his friend Micah Turnbo in a conversation:

“My love language is obedience.”

I had interviewed Micah a few years ago, but we lost touch for a while. In late 2024, I began to notice that my interview with Micah began to go viral on YouTube.

“What is going on with Micah?” I wondered. “How is he getting so popular that people are now searching for and finding *our* interview?”

God led me to watch a video of a talk Micah Turnbo gave at Vineyard Northwest church entitled, “The Cost of Friendship with God.” I didn’t think the title was very inviting. It did not seem very “seeker-friendly” to advertise the cost of friendship with God. Even the thumbnail for the video seemed a put-off: “Friendship with Jesus - CRUSHING OUR IDOLS”. *Who is doing the PR for the team at Vineyard Northwest? How is this going to attract listeners? Why did this have 50,000+ views?*

Jesus had much to teach me over the course of the few days following listening to Micah’s talk. He led me to an audiobook that talked about how it is impossible for us to save ourselves. For the very one, our ego, that is “managing” our search for salvation, is also the one who will make certain we *never* find it... for to do so means that *it* must die. This is on par with the ridiculousness of asking Mr. Smith to find salvation for Neo.

Remember that passage of Scripture that describes the one who

is, “ever learning but never able to come to the knowledge of the truth”? Yeah, that describes everyone who refuses to submit to God’s way of making us right with Himself by faith (through trusting and simply receiving).

The audiobook continued until it finally culminated in this moment that arrested me. It said, “Therefore, you must relinquish being your own teacher and fully surrender to the Teacher, the Christ.” I stopped the audiobook right then and there to process this and pray through it.

Jesus doubled down later that night (last night) by saying, *“You must recognize that you, the student, are incapable of teaching yourself. You have ONE Teacher, the Christ. You must recognize that you, the patient, cannot heal yourself. You must surrender to the care of your Great Physician, the Christ. You must trust my skill with my scalpel, the sword of MY Spirit. Yes, I will expose you and lay you bare. There is nothing hidden from my sight. This is the only Way for us to achieve intimacy. You must bare your soul to me. You must become vulnerable.*

You are the patient. I am your Physician.

Yes, your independence, your “ego”, is the cancer I am removing from you. You will lose the ability to be your own god. This is what true worship is. To lay down your “self”, your “ego”, on the altar to Me as a living sacrifice. Many of you, like Saul of Tarsus, have constructed various religious and spiritual egos that you have invested your whole lives in building. It is difficult to walk away from that kind of investment. But you must! This is why I said, “If the light within you is actually darkness, how great is that darkness!”

I am convinced that there is no more dangerous and insidious demonic stronghold than the religious or even the “spiritual” variety. Remember the metaphor of the black alien creature who became Spider-Man’s alter ego in Spider-Man 2? We, too, entertain false identities (*religious or spiritual identities*) that contradict the

truth of our New Creation Identity of who we are in Christ.

Jesus naturally and supernaturally frees us from all of that... and how? By being *so* captivating and delightful. He holds your attention so you have no time (the currency of your life) to be bound to evil and darkness and lies.

Why else do you think it says, "Delight yourself in I AM and he will give you the desires of your heart"? (Psalm 34:7) And, as it says elsewhere, "In *his* presence there is fullness of JOY and at his right hand, there are pleasures evermore." (Psalm 16:11)

How might that look? To delight oneself in God? *Let's ask him!*

Jesus, what does it mean for me to delight in you?

Jesus replied: "Come on adventures with me!"

Micah recently got into trouble with a heresy hunter (*it's a rite of passage... see Matthew 5*) for the following story that Micah told during a podcast:

Jesus asked Micah to see the *Avengers: Endgame* movie for him. He thought, 'Okay, so Jesus wants to enjoy this movie, and he will be accompanying me spiritually.'

Once at the theatre, Micah saw a man wearing blue jeans, socks, and sandals, and a Spiderman shirt, ordering a drink and talking to the woman behind the counter. This man came into the theatre after Micah and sat down right next to Micah. The man leaned over during the film and shared a few words with Micah, which annoyed him. Micah wanted to ignore him and be an introvert for the evening. This man even had the nerve, during the film, to help himself to *Micah's* popcorn! Can you believe it?

After the movie, the man turned to Micah and said, "Wouldn't

it be awesome if everyone in the body of Christ had the attitude of Spiderman in that film? I would love for everyone to be like that."

'Oh, you're a believer. That's wonderful.' Micah thought.

"Who are you?" Micah asked.

"I am Jesus."

And then... he disappeared.

Doesn't it make you curious to ask the question: "What were the qualities about Spider-Man in that film that Jesus so admired? What attitude of Spider-Man caught Jesus' attention like this?"

The Lord Jesus took me into Papa's fiery heart last night. I felt the glory of his *LOVE* as I stood in the very center of Source. I found myself in the holy of holies, in the very heart of Papa. I was surprised I was able to stand. I was completely relaxed and at peace... completely surrendered, completely vulnerable to God in that "NOW" moment. The lyrics of a Jennifer Knapp song played through my mind, "*She is strong enough to stand in my love...*" 

There, in the heart of Papa, upon a pillar of light, rested a crown.

"This belongs to you", Papa told me.

"Papa, you hang on to this for me," I responded. "This crown will stay right here in your heart."

I realized in that moment that *this* is what Jesus did! (As a way of observation, this seems to me to be the heart of those in whom God is working to "will and to do of his good pleasure". This was the "Christ in me" that worships God by "casting my crown" before His throne.)

"I trust you to rule, Papa God. You are my Master, Yeshua." I told Yeshua yesterday, after I posted a blog that I *thought* he was leading me to post, "You can jerk me around any way you want to, Jesus. I trust you."

He told me that very night when I went to prayer: “Daniel, you are not my bitch. You are not on a chain. I don’t yank you around. You are free. This is *not* what being my servant looks like. For I no longer call you a servant, but I call you my son, in whom I am well pleased. You are my friend!”

Brilliant.

Twenty-four hours didn’t even pass, however, before I retreated to religious fear. The very next morning, I invoked the whole bond slave thing from Scripture because I didn’t trust myself to manage my freedom as his friend. I am convinced that even if we are his bond slave, which isn’t a bad thing to decide to do with our freedom, that we, first and foremost, ARE his son or daughter.

We are, first and foremost, Jesus’ friend. He will never remove this identity status from us. This is the fullness we possess in this eternal life within this New Covenant he has established in us as believers, as his Bride. If we choose to become his bond slave, it must be for love’s sake... not for fear.

We can’t escape the fact that loving God is intrinsically tied to loving others. (*And why would we want to?*) John writes that we can’t say we love God if we fail to love one another (1 John). Jesus’ greatest command is that we love one another as he has loved us.

“We do this by keeping our eyes on Jesus, the champion who initiates and perfects our faith.” — Hebrews 12:2 NLT

It is high time we get our eyes off ourselves.

Jesus says, “Keep your eyes on me...” 

Jesus BIG “If”

Jesus says to his followers — to Christians:

“Look! I stand at the door and knock. If you hear my voice and open the door, I will come in, and we will share a meal together as friends.” — Revelation 3:20 NLT

If you hear his voice, and open the door... Haven’t Christians already opened the door? Why is this invitation addressed to a church? *Why?*

Because this is an ongoing relationship. The health of this relationship depends on both parties doing their part. Jesus is faithful to do his part. He is always available to every one of us. But, he is a perfect gentleman and never forces himself upon any one of us. So, it is up to each one of us to take him up on his offer of friendship, to seize this opportunity, and “open the door to Jesus” and take hold of this as our lived *Reality* every day!

This message from Jesus to his church (whom the Scriptures refer to as the Bride of Christ,) recalls to our minds a scene in the Song of Songs:

“I slept, but my heart was awake,
when I heard my lover knocking and calling:
“Open to me, my treasure, my darling,
my dove, my perfect one.
My head is drenched with dew,
my hair with the dampness of the night.”

— Song of Solomon 5:2 NLT

I am now convinced that Jesus is referencing *this* passage concerning *us* from *his* Song of Songs in this verse in Revelation,

when he says, “I stand at the door and knock.” Have you ever thought about that before? One must consider where this relationship with God is headed.

Have we considered how the Bible directs us to see our relationship with God as a Divine romance? There is *so much more* intimacy to be had in our relationship with Jesus, as the Song of Songs hints at.

Yikes! Oh, Dear God! What is going on here? I think we are failing to grasp the intimate significance of this! Especially if you were to read and receive the whole message of Solomon’s Song of Songs!

The question remains... will we trouble ourselves to rise from our slumber at his knock, to go unlatch the door and invite Jesus, the lover of our souls, in? There are many prophetic voices (including Brian Simmons and John Crowder) who are referencing Song of Songs as Jesus’ personal intimate message to his Bride at this time.

Jesus is prepared to be intimate with his Bride in ways far beyond what we could have imagined! Jesus is the bliss of the Father.

And yes, that might be a bit too intense for many of us right now. Yet this is where my journey with Jesus Christ, Yeshua Hamashiach, has led me.

I woke up this morning with a greeting from Jesus. He called me his iconoclast and sang to me:

“If a face could launch a thousand ships...” 

Jesus sang this... over *me*. I *have* to personalize this. I spent most of my life shirking him and shrugging him off, sending this message of his love to someone else... anyone else... but this *really* ticked Jesus off! He expressed how upset this made him and the

relational distance I imposed upon us when I did this. He showed me that I had spent (wasted) my *whole* life resisting him and keeping up my defenses as I refused his love for me, *personally*.

"If you only knew how much my Father and I love you." — Jesus

Now Jesus is affirming me in his love by singing the lyrics of the love song "*If*" by the '70s band, *Bread*, to me first thing this morning?!? *THIS* is Jesus' BIG:

"if"

I listened to this song today and read the lyrics with my daughter Emma. It moved her and me to tears. Why had I insisted on this resistance to his love? Why had I insisted on my reluctance to be loved?

"He is jealous for me, he loves like a hurricane and I am a tree, bending beneath the weight of his wind and mercy." — How He Loves, John Mark McMillan

Are we ready to bend?

In other words, are we ready to *really* surrender?

I am so *grateful* for the day I discovered an artist named St. Finnikin. One day, on the way to lead worship at youth group with my kids, we looked up on Spotify and found his song *I Surrender*. I listened to it on repeat for half an hour and wondered, “Am I truly surrendering to God? Have I *truly* surrendered to His love?”

How do I make certain I am not continuing to resist him? How do I maintain a heart posture of surrender to Jesus and his love?

So I ask him!

May we all have our own lakeside conversations with Jesus as Peter did at Galilee and find our Way again. May we find our Way back into an intimate David & Jonathan or Jesus & John covenant friendship... or... we could take this *all* the Way into what God has imagined this to be all along... into the heart of our Savior... into the intimate love and the Oneness of a:

Husband & Wife

Who You Are

*“I feel safe when I’m with you
And after all that we’ve been through
You’ve proven yourself worthy of my heart*

*So I’m practicing your Presence
And I lay down all my resistance
To experience the joy of who you are*

CHORUS: *Who you are, who you are, who you are, Jesus...*  ³⁸

"But the one who joins himself to the Lord is mingled into one spirit with him." — 1 Corinthians 6:17 TPT

Merging into God

Chapter Nineteen

Has God ever stepped into one of your dreams? Ask him to! It's always a life-altering and treasured experience when God shows up in one of my dreams. Here is one example of this:

I stood in a church with Jesus. We observed a doctor together as he provided his services, free of charge, to the poor and homeless. They would come in shifts, one after another, and the doctor would serve them joyfully, with a smile on his face. Jesus and I stood there, watching him.

"I don't do that," I said to Jesus.

Jesus looked at me and responded, "Of course you do. You do do that."

We both enjoyed a laugh about how his statement came out.

One of my most profound epic 'God encounters' (circa 2013) occurred in a dream that seemed to weave together several movies I had seen. It began with a scene of Russell Crowe as Jor-El, Superman's father, warring with one who was the epitome of evil. He overcame and crushed this evil beneath his feet, but, instead of being destroyed, this evil entity went into the earth itself and poisoned it. A council of the heavenly host was called together to decide what to do. Seventeen Earth years passed while the meeting was held. We emerged from a room in a high-rise skyscraper in a

city in America to find the city cloaked in darkness. The land was covered with a layer of ash, perhaps six inches thick. It was dangerous at this point to shine any light, as it would immediately attract spiritual forces of darkness that would attack us.

In the next scene, an angel, appearing as Sandra Bullock (*Gravity*), was chosen for a mission by the host of heaven. She was prepared and eager to go. It was decided that she was to travel back in time to prevent a senseless evil, which I knew to be the Vietnam War. Her love interest was not willing to lose her to this mission, and he grasped at her tether as she floated away up into space on her mission.

In the next scene, I was the groom in a wedding, but something was awry. The bride looked intently into my eyes, wishing beyond hope I could understand something incredibly vital she desperately wanted to convey, but she couldn't just come out and say it. What she was able to say, she spoke with much formality (for the others' sake) yet also with great intensity (for my sake) as she willed me to read her mind. She was on the verge of tears, in deep disquietude.

As I withdrew from this scene, I kept repeating this phrase in my mind, "formal, yet intimate... formal, yet intimate", when all of a sudden, I was in a theatre. Absently, I noticed a film rolling on a small screen in the far upper right corner of a vast auditorium. I then realized that this was all happening in my own mind (*Beautiful Mind & Mr. Nobody*).

'Was I constructing all of this to try to work out my issues and solve problems?' I wondered.

I then said aloud, "I think the One I am to marry is God."

The very instant I said this, God in his glory, suddenly appeared in my dream and approached me.

This was real! God, in His Holiness and Shekinah glory, had just stepped into my dream! I was overwhelmed by the reality of

His *Holiness*! My mind raced to come up with something to say in His Presence. (*As if I were trying to impress him?*)

Before I could say or do anything, God telepathically communicated to me, as if holding out his finger to emphasize the point, "Don't tell me what you think I want to hear. And don't put words in my mouth either."

I understood in that moment that God simply wanted to hear my genuine heart, not any false words. Just be sincere. He certainly didn't want me to project words onto him, pretending to know what he might say. The message is clear:

"Just be yourself and let God be God."

God will *always* surprise you! He is a very real person with whom we can have a very real relationship.

I will always remember what happened next. In one breathtaking moment, I "fell" forward and floated toward God. Like a moth absorbed into the flame, I melded right into God's glory, and we merged as One! I felt the brilliant vibrations of my spirit and His Spirit tuning into each other as I awoke! What an absolutely brilliant experience! We are One!

This isn't just true of me, but of every true believer in Jesus! We are One in Spirit with him, just as the Scriptures say:

"The two are united into one ...the person who is joined to the Lord is one spirit with him." — 1 Corinthians 6:16-17
NLT

Jesus has received what he prayed for, as recorded in John's Gospel... Oneness!

"I pray that they will all be one, just as you and I are one—as you are in me, Father, and I am in you. And may they be

in us so that the world will believe you sent me. I have given them the glory you gave me, so they may be one as we are one. I am in them and you are in me. ” — Jesus, John 17:21-23 NLT

The following morning, when I shared my dream with my little girl, I talked about how our relationship with God is really like a marriage. God is totally committed to us, and when we commit to "him", this covenant relationship works. Just as a man and wife become one, Jesus (the Groom) and the believer (His Bride) become One. Marriage is a picture and illustration of *this* mystical reality!

Paul compared our union, our Oneness, between Christ and us to a marriage in his letter to the Ephesians 5:30-32 NLT:

“We are members of his body. As the Scriptures say, “A man leaves his father and mother and is joined to his wife, and the two are united into one.” This is a great mystery, but it is an illustration of the way Christ and the church are one.”

ACTIVATION:

Invite God to speak to you in your dreams tonight. Invite him to participate in your dreams and show you something about himself. Invite Jesus to reveal your Oneness with God to you.

Write down your “God” dreams in your dream journal.

"Maybe all men got one big soul everybody's a part of, all faces are the same man. One big self." —Private Witt, *The Thin Red Line* (Adapted from *Grapes of Wrath*)

"So when that day comes, you will know that I am living in the Father and that you are one with me, for I will be living in you." — Jesus, John 14:20 TPT

Our Mystical Union with God

Chapter Twenty

One night, while enjoying fellowship with God and feeling his very tangible nearness late at night in my living room, Jesus appeared to me and spoke these words:

"Daniel, I am in you, and you are in me, and we are One."

He spoke these words over and over, and, each time as He did so, new layers of revelation cascaded over my mind.

"I am in you, and you are in me, and we are One. This is important." Jesus said.

Recall that Jesus spoke these very same words in the Gospel of John. As you read the following words of our Savior, ask Holy Spirit to bring you further revelation even now.

"On that day you will know that I *am* in My Father, and you *are* in Me, and I in you." — John 14:20 NASB

Jesus then told me that in due time, everyone would "get it".

What a glorious day that will be! I didn't need to convince *anyone*.
I'm reminded of this promise from Scripture:

“For as the waters fill the sea, the earth will be filled with an awareness of the glory of the LORD.” — Habakkuk 2:14
NLT

The earth is *already* filled with the glory of the LORD, the *I AM*!
One day we will all know it!

Directly after this encounter with Jesus, I fell asleep on my living room floor. That night, my cat, Cappuccino, came and lay on my chest and pawed my face. As I woke briefly to his fluffy mittens on my face, Jesus once again greeted me with the words:

“Remember this, Daniel. This is important.”

One With God

It is one thing to mentally assent to the truth revealed in Scripture that we are One with God. It is quite another matter entirely when God opens your eyes and you are flooded with the startling realization, the knowing, that you are indeed One with God!

Soon after my “John 14:20” encounter with Jesus, I was driving North from Appleton on Highway 47, on my way to play a concert in a nursing home in Seymour, Wisconsin. As I drove, Holy Spirit of Truth opened my mind once again to my union with God in such a startling way. The astonishing, staggering epiphany of the truth of our Oneness with God suddenly hit me once again like a ton of bricks!

The *I AM* inhabits my being! The *I AM* has incarnated in me and *as* me! My spirit is mingled with, and indeed One, with *His* spirit!

"But the one who joins himself to the Lord is mingled into one spirit with him." — 1 Corinthians 6:17 TPT

Oh my Lord! I am One with God! I was completely stunned by the profound weight and significance of this revelation. It is as radical as the following statement:

The *I AM* is having a (*insert your name here*) experience!

It was nearly impossible to accept. I was afraid I might have just been deceived. I would surely have been labeled a heretic a few hundred years ago and burned at the stake for being so presumptuous and bold as to even entertain such a thought as this.

"Is there support for this in Scripture?" I wondered. As a student of Scripture, I was familiar with a few pertinent passages that encourage this point of view, such as when Paul wrote, "God is all and living in you all", and when Peter wrote of becoming a "partaker of the Divine Nature". Yet now, when the truth of it so confronted me with its stark reality, when it became actually realized and believed by me, why did it feel so dangerous? As if I am flirting with blasphemy?

As Morpheus said to Neo in the movie *The Matrix*:

"Sooner or later, you're going to realize just as I did that there's a difference between knowing the path and walking the path."

Walking the path of Oneness will look and feel different from any way we've ever imagined it.

Everything about Jesus' message and mission has led to this ultimate singular glorious Divine embrace in the Father and in the Son... in Oneness. The last recorded words of Jesus in the Gospel

of John before Jesus went to the cross were about this magnum opus of Christ's message regarding Oneness.

Oneness, According to Jesus

I'm sure most of us have read Jesus' words in John chapter seventeen. I've always heard others talk about Jesus' prayer in this passage as just a prayer for "unity" in the church. Was Jesus really *only* saying, "Father, I hope for my followers to all get along like we do?"

Or, was Jesus praying for something *far* deeper and *far* more profound? What exactly *was* Jesus asking for when He prayed for "Oneness"? What does Oneness mean? Did Jesus receive what he asked for?

Let's read again what Jesus prayed for you, his disciple, as if reading it for the first time:

"And I ask not only for these disciples, but also for all those who will one day believe in me through their message.

I pray for them all to be joined together as one, even as you and I, Father, are joined together as one.

I pray for them **to become one with us** so that the world will recognize that you sent me.

For the very glory you have given to me I have given them so that they will be joined together as one and experience the same unity that we enjoy.³⁹

You live fully in me and now I live fully in them so that they

³⁹ "It is important to note that the key to unity among believers is experiencing the glory of God that Jesus has imparted to us. As one with God through faith in Christ, he shares his glory with us, since we are not "another," but have been made one with the triune God through the blood of Jesus. See Isaiah 42:8" — Brian Simmons

will experience perfect unity (*The Aramaic here for unity is “shrink into one.”*) and the world will be convinced that you have sent me, for they will see that you love each one of them with the same passionate love that you have for me.

“Father, I ask that you allow everyone that you have given to me to be with me where I am!

(*We are seated with Christ in the heavenly realms. See Eph. 2:6; Col. 3:1-4*)

Then they will see my full glory—the very splendor you have placed upon me because you have loved me even before the beginning of time.

“You are my righteous Father, but the unbelieving world has never known you in the perfect way that I know you!

And all those who believe in me also know that you have sent me!

I have revealed to them who you are, and I will continue to make you even more real to them, so that they may experience the same endless love that you have for me, for your love will now live in them, even as I live in them!”

— John 17:20-26 The Passion Translation

What did Holy Spirit reveal to you in this passage? Take a moment to process what Jesus is saying to you right now. Are you challenged to see anything in a new way?

What amazes me most about the above passage is how Jesus reveals that we are the recipients of the same passionate love the Father has for Jesus!

Father loves *you* just as much as he loves Jesus!

It is Jesus’ and the Father’s desire that we may experience the

very *same* endless love that Father has for Jesus, and that the Father's love would live in us. Jesus is absolutely committed to making Father and His love more real to us as He continues in perpetuity to reveal the Father!

Jesus prayed that we would be *One* with the Father and the Son. Did Father answer Jesus' prayer? Of course he did! We are not apart from God; we are a part *of* God. We are One with God and therefore have unity with each other in Christ. True unity begins with realizing our Oneness with the Son and with the Father. If you are One with God, and I am One with God, then we will possess and enjoy perfect Oneness together. *Perfect Unity!*

Our Oneness with God is the source of our unity, our Oneness, with each other.

What if we began to trust one another? What if we stopped thinking that any one of us is better than any other version of Christ?

Jesus Christ lives in *every* believer. Just as the Father lives fully in Christ, now Christ, and the Father, live fully in *US*. Our Oneness with the Father and the Son will translate to our functioning in perfect unity as God's body—the body of Christ, and his Bride, his perfect partner. We will give of ourselves in mutual submission to one another as we all learn to let Christ lead in this dance and learn to keep in step with Holy Spirit. Imagine every cell in the body of Christ in clear communion with, and submission to, every impulse of the mind of Christ!

Unity = the Fruit of Our Oneness With God

We have already heard the story of Margie and her heavenly encounter, in which she watched as the Bride assembled into One to rescue all the lost, hungry, hurting, and destitute souls. She wrote about another encounter with the angels where she learned

more. The following is a quote from her book, *Angels Dance, But Do They Sing?*

“Will we ever realize we are capable of being the color of the completed Bride of Christ?” I asked.

“Watch again.” She moves the people together. Their colors begin to swirl and blend. “It is the plan of *I AM* for you to need each other. As you come together, receiving insight and understanding from each other, you link up and unify, becoming the color of Jesus Himself. The Bride of Christ is your color.”

Each person looks at themselves, discovering they are the new color of the strikingly beautiful Bride. I deeply take in the loveliness of the sight of the completed Bride of Christ. What a glorious display of the heart of Papa God. As one voice, we break out in praise and thanksgiving to Him who was, who is, and who is to come! We are divinely connected. We are so diverse, yet so one — united in Him.

We’re listening intently as the angel declares: “This is how Jesus sees His Bride. Not fragmented, but wholly, securely interlinked, and interlocked...”

What if we honored Christ in one another? What if we actually began to trust Christ in each other?

For some reason, when I imagine unity in the church, I picture Marvel’s *Guardians of the Galaxy* team. God has fit us together into a team, just as he determines. We are better together. We have to trust ourselves in this team. Together we will do exploits in the Spirit for the glory of God!

We are meant to flow in the spirit together like a well-trained and wholly invested rock band, or a sports team, with every person fitted together in perfection, all performing their necessary function... like the crew of the starship Enterprise. We are made to flow in the Spirit together! It’s time to dance together as One!

Heavenly Dance Dream

I found myself at the base of a grassy hill. Pastor Al (now in glory) was there playing a portable keyboard, as he led worship for a group of children. Two others carried the keyboard as all the children were dancing, singing, laughing, and playing. As I followed this joyful assembly, we all walked up the hill together toward a very large building situated at the top.

Al and the kids marched off alongside this magnificent structure, still singing, as I stopped and took an interest in this building. It was a Great Hall, and what was happening inside was astounding! As I walked in through an open-air portico, I was mesmerized as I beheld *hundreds* of dancers in an intricate and elaborate dance. Up till this moment, I had not cared much for dancing, but this won me over instantly! *I am now a forever fan of dancing!*

What I beheld was very much like a scene in the movie *Rio 2*, when the birds perform a complex and stunning dance in the sky. I was drawn in by the dance and felt compelled to join the dance! I desperately wanted to join in! I stepped out in faith, trusting that I would, somehow, by the Spirit, intrinsically know my place and how to join in this brilliant and breathtaking dance!

As I proceeded onto the dance floor, it became clear in a matter of moments that I was all but two left feet. Much to my embarrassment, I stumbled and fumbled and, as soon as possible, I slinked off to the sidelines of the dance floor so as not to further disturb the beauty of the dance.

As I stood there watching, I overheard two angels talking *about me*. One said to another, "This is because of how he has treated so n' so."

Dang!

Of course, after this dream, I was determined not to treat so n'

so with disrespect again. How I had behaved on earth had really foiled my dancing mojo in heaven. And perhaps that was the entire point of my dream. This warning encourages me not to judge another or treat another with contempt, but instead, to honor and accept one another. “Honor all men”, the Scripture says. The magic happens when we do! We must respect Jesus’ choice in placing so n’ so in our lives and on our team.

God Won’t Give His Glory to Another!

Recall how Jesus said in his prayer to the Father, “the very glory you have given to me I have given them” (John 17:22). How can this be? For God says in the book of Isaiah:

“I am the LORD (YHWH), that is My name; I will **not** give My glory to another, nor My praise to graven images.” —
Isaiah 42:8 NASB

But God shares his glory with *us*! And here is the secret —the mystery revealed:

We are not “another”!

We are One with God! Yes, of course Jesus has given *US* his glory! For we are One with him! The Apostle Paul confirms this glorious truth in his letter to the Roman believers:

“And having chosen them, he called them to come to him. And having called them, he gave them right standing with himself. And having given them right standing, he gave them his glory.” — Romans 8:30 NLT

One of the aspects of being a recipient of his glory (and I certainly don’t pretend for a moment to grasp *all* the profound

ramifications of this mystery) is that we have been made holy. The apostle Paul writes that we are “holy and without blame before him in love” (*memorize Ephesians One!*) and speaks of us as the righteousness of God in Christ Jesus!

“He made Him who knew no sin to be sin on our behalf, so that we might become the righteousness of God in Him.” —
2 Corinthians 5:21 NASB

I do love unpacking this aspect of the consequence of being a recipient of this New Covenant that Jesus has established *US* in. Namely, our purity.

Paul wrote: “For you were once darkness, but now **you are light in the Lord**. Live as children of light.” (Ephesians 5:8 NIV)

Light *is* the core of our identity.

You *are* light in the Lord!

As Jesus said in his Kingdom Manifesto: “You are the light of the world.”

How slow we are to believe his message.

Let’s extrapolate on this further, shall we?

Bride Theology

As we are now well aware, Paul uses the metaphor for believers as “the Bride of Christ”. Let’s take a closer look at a passage to see what we can learn. Paul writes to the church in Ephesus:

And to the husbands, you are to demonstrate love for your wives with the same tender devotion that Christ demonstrated to us, his bride. For he died for us, sacrificing himself to make us holy and pure, cleansing us through the

showering of the pure water of the Word of God. *All that he does in us is designed* to make us a mature church for his pleasure, until we become a source of praise to him—glorious and radiant, beautiful and holy, without fault or flaw.

Husbands have the obligation of loving and caring for their wives the same way they love and care for their own bodies, for to love your wife is to love your own self. No one abuses his own body, but pampers it—serving and satisfying its needs. That’s exactly what Christ does for his church! *He serves and satisfies us* as members of his body.

For this reason a man is to leave his father and his mother and lovingly hold to his wife, since the two have become joined as one flesh. Marriage is the beautiful design of the Almighty, a great mystery of Christ and his church. So every married man should be gracious to his wife just as he is gracious to himself. And every wife should be tenderly devoted to her husband. — Ephesians 5:25-33 The Passion Translation

Did you catch that? “A great mystery of Christ and his church.” The two have become joined as One flesh.

Brian Simmons shared in an interview that one of the most important verses in the Bible is found in Song of Solomon 1:2, which says, “Let him kiss me with the kisses of his mouth”.

I was *not* expecting him to say that.⁴⁰

I imagine the Bride singing:

“Jesus and me, sitting in a tree, K-I-S-S-I-N-G.”

⁴⁰ *But I was expecting not to expect it, so it doesn’t count.*

Okay, I may be exaggerating for effect, but Brian shared this verse as the heartbeat of God's message to his Bride. This is a love song Solomon wrote for Christ and his Bride. God is not content with you shirking *this* place in his heart.

Jesus will not relent until you say, "I am yours". It's just like the lyrics to that song You Won't Relent by Jesus Culture: "You won't relent until you have it all... my heart is yours" 

He is after your heart. He desperately wants you to know that *you* are his Beloved! He created you to love you! This has always been *your* love story!!!⁴¹

So, as a believer, as one who belongs to Jesus, are you not joined together in holy matrimony as the Bride of Christ according to the Bible? Have the two now become One?

God once told me to publicly deliver the following prophetic message:

"God wants to make a covenant with you, and it is a covenant of marriage."

That went down like a rat sandwich at the time, and I chalk it up as one of the most regrettable decisions I have ever made. I obeyed, and it ruined "my" life (*it's a long story*).

Believer, you are One with God at your core — One with God, who is Light, in whom there is no darkness at all. Therefore, are we to surmise that in you, the believer, there is no darkness at all? Are you beginning to see the profound implications here?

You have been given such *purity* as the Bride of Christ! He has washed you clean, without spot or blemish or any such thing. That's in the Bible!

⁴¹ If ever there were a time for exclamation points, it is now!!!
This is why exclamation points were invented!

Jesus announced to his twelve disciples, “You are already clean because of the word I have spoken to you.” (John 15:3 NIV) He speaks the same cleansing word over you.

Jesus makes His Bride as holy *as* He is holy. Our Creator Jesus makes his Bride, the church, believers, even as perfect as the Father! The same One who said, “Let there be light, and there was light”, has said to you and me, “Be perfect therefore as your Heavenly Father is perfect”, in his Kingdom Manifesto. Is it then, not so?

Do you think that Jesus would do any *less* for his Beloved? Do you think he would leave his Bride any *less* holy than the Father Himself?

He shares his glory with his Bride because there is no distance or separation, no distinction or delineation between *US* because the two are One!

What can we expect to experience, if indeed Jesus gives us the very same glory the Father gives to Jesus? Can we be so bold as to expect:

- Receiving daily the same love that the Father lavishes on Jesus? (John 17:23)
- To know that Father listens as intently to your prayers as those of his own Son Jesus? (1 John 5:14-15)
- As the Bride, in union with Christ, to receive the *same* honor, dignity, and respect from all of heaven that Jesus does? (Romans 8:17) *Woah... that's an uncomfortable stretch!*
- To experience righteousness, peace, and joy in the Holy Spirit? (Which *is* the essence of the Kingdom of God - Romans 14:17)
- Encounters with Jesus, the Father, and angels like the very ones you have been reading about in this book? (John 14:21) For everyone who seeks, finds. Everyone who asks receives.

Everyone who knocks, the door will be opened. He doesn't abandon us as orphans; he will come to us. (John 14:18)

- Dreams from God, visions, and revelations? (Joel 2:28; Colossians 2:2-3)
- Accessing and appropriating the gifts of the Holy Spirit, which are made available to you? (1 Corinthians 14) We are encouraged to earnestly desire *all* spiritual gifts!
- Accessing a Wisdom greater than Solomon in the "mind of Christ"? (Matthew 12:42)
- To *experience* friendship with Jesus and all the host of heaven? (John 15:15; John 17:3; Psalm 46:11)
- And finally, (though the list could go on and on), the tender devotion of Christ Jesus as he pampers us, serving us and satisfying the needs of his Beloved Bride.

This and more is your inheritance as a coheir with Jesus Christ of all that God is. He withholds no good thing from his Beloved... You!

You Are Now With Jesus Where He Is

Jesus prayed, "Father, I ask that you allow everyone that you have given to me to be with me where I am!" (John 17:4)

Scripture informs us that if we have come to Jesus, this proves that the Father has given us to Jesus (John 6:37). Have you come to Jesus?

If so, it is my joy and delight to inform you that you are ascended in Jesus Christ! You are with Jesus where he is—with the Father!

Holy Spirit bears witness to this:

"He raised us up with Christ the exalted One, *and we*

ascended with him into the glorious perfection and authority of the heavenly realm, for we are now co-seated as one with Christ!" — Ephesians 2:6 TPT (italics by Translator Brian Simmons)

Jesus could not have brought you any higher or closer to the very heart of Father than he already has. You are, right now, smack dab in the center of the very Source who is infinite Perfect Love. You are right now in the very holy of holies. The veil has been torn!

In my interview with Dr. Bruce Allen, he told of a revelation that the church in heaven and on earth are coming together as One in a way we have never experienced before. Jesus is going to seamlessly make the church whole like it never has been before, and we will go back and forth between each realm. Bruce told me of an occasion where he met with Jesus in heaven, and he invited him to sit with him on his throne. As he went and sat on Jesus' lap, Jesus said, "Now you're ready to pray. This is where you are seated. Together with me."

All of a sudden, he dissolved into Jesus, and Jesus said, "Now, you pray *from* power and authority, not *for* power and authority."

You are now with Jesus, where he is! Let's learn to pray as Jesus would have us to.

There is much more I could say about our Oneness with God, and I will gladly do so... in song form .

*"To be one with the One, who is love eternal, this is our destiny,
To be one with the One, whose glory fills the skies,
To be one with the One, who is love eternal, this is our destiny,
To be one with the Son of God, Jesus is His Name!" *

— Lyrics of *Hold On My Love*, from *Reflect Love* by Daniel & Catherine Lovett (www.reflect.bandcamp.com)

For now, I direct your focus and energies to connect with Jesus Christ to receive deeper insights from Holy Spirit about your Oneness with God.

Prayer:

Jesus, Thank you for being so devoted to bringing us into the fullest aspects of our identity in you. We know the enemy has sought to infiltrate and inoculate us against remembering who you truly are and who we truly are in you, Jesus. You are the Light that pierces all darkness, the Truth, like the sun, that evaporates our dark ignorance. You bring illumination to the deepest recesses of our hearts, enlightening our souls to what Spirit has always known and has reserved for us to step into... our very own identity in you, and, AS you.

We trust you to continue to teach us about our Oneness and what it means to be a partaker of your Divine Nature. We give ourselves to your instruction and teaching, Everlasting Father, our wise Sage, Holy Spirit of Truth, who lovingly guides us into all truth.

“When Christ, who is **our** life, is revealed, then **you also** will be revealed with Him in glory.” — Colossians 3:4 NASB

“You are not a drop in the ocean; you are the entire ocean in a drop.” — Rumi 

Partakers of the Divine Nature

Chapter Twenty One

After the revelations of Oneness I detailed in the previous chapter, it felt like God had just spilled the beans of some marvelous secret, and I would be hated by everyone for spoiling it for others by telling them... Or, on the flip side, perhaps I am the *last* one finally to catch on and everyone *but* me already knew this secret, and you all are actors in my own personal *Truman Show*?

Welcome to the Daniel Lovett show, episode 10082024. (In this episode, I learn that I am ancient, coming in at just over 1.5 billion seconds old, and, I resolve most of the problems of the universe.)

Accepted in the Beloved.

Have you ever woken up, and it takes you a few seconds to calibrate into *this* reality? That happened to me one morning, and,

for about five seconds, I couldn't remember much of anything about "who I was". The hard drive of my mind had booted up, but the software *programs* had not yet loaded.

It was peaceful. I experienced a wonderful peace, without a single care in the world. Two seconds passed, and Jesus spoke to me:

"You are accepted in the Beloved."

I glowed in this revelation. I repeated it back to myself. All I knew about myself in that moment was, "I am accepted in the Beloved." His words established me in an even deeper state of marvelous peace and a settled sense of joy.

A few more moments passed, and then, the *programs* started to load. Sadly, I began to remember "who I was", or rather, who I believed I was. I'll be honest, words like "hopeless" and "perpetual failure" and "depressed" came to mind at my own assessment of "me". This is the false self "ego" which the Bible calls the "flesh". It is the mind of the "world" — the enemies "programme" (a series of coded software instructions to control the operation of a computer or other machine).

The weight of regrets and shame I had collected over my life threatened to displace the peace that my Good Shepherd and Overseer (Guardian) of my soul had installed just moments before. I realized something at that point.

Why would I come into agreement with what the enemy would have me believe about who I am, rather than identify with what Jesus has to say about me? *Who Jesus says I am?*

Jesus had already revealed to me that to collect and live under the weight of regrets and shame is no way to *live*. Jesus never intended for me to carry those burdens. He says, "Give me back

my stuff!" This is not living in the freedom of the Gospel in my identity as the New Creation that Jesus has established *US* as.

Just think of it! He declares that we are a new creation in Christ Jesus! The old is gone, and the new has come!

In the second installment of a Pixar animated film, *Inside Out*, this young lady, Riley, had a core identity of: "I'm a good person" ... that is, until Anxiety began to install certain thoughts of fears and worries in the basement vault of her subconscious mind. These began to join together to form a new base reality and core identity that SHOUTED: "I'm not good enough!!!"

The terms of the New Covenant that God has established with us, by his sacrifice, ensure us that we have a new heart that looks just like Jesus. The New Creation *Reality* is:

"Christ in us, the hope of glory!"

The biblical definition of hope is "a confident expectation", and to glorify means to "give a correct estimate of", and Christ means "anointing". So, to properly understand this phrase is to realize that we have an absolute confidence and expectation, because of the Christ anointing that we have received by the Holy Spirit, to accurately re-present, to give a correct estimate of, God and his nature of *LOVE*... even Perfect Love.

His glory, that he gives us, therefore, is the ability to re-present the Father.

"Jesus testifies about what he has seen and heard, but how few believe what he tells them!" — John 3:32 NLT

When will we begin to believe what God believes about us? When will we begin to trust his love? When will we own the fact that we are God's Beloved? When will we grasp that, according to

Jesus, you and I are loved by the Father as much as he loves his Beloved Son Jesus? Is this too scandalous for us to receive? Is this too scandalous for us to believe?

When will we begin to believe that in our co-union with God, in our Oneness with the Father, established by the Lord Jesus and His Holy Spirit, that it would be fair to say that we are the fourth member of the Trinity? But perhaps even that metaphor puts us at too far of a distance or separation from the life of the Trinity? What if we are more wrapped up into the embrace of the Trinity than we could ever possibly fathom?

At this point, I can hear Jack Nicholson's voice from the movie *A Few Good Men* as he shouts at the top of his lungs:

"YOU CAN'T HANDLE THE TRUTH!"

Is Jack right?

<The fact that you have read this far without throwing this book across the room could be a strong indicator that Jack was wrong about you.>

You, as a believer, must come into agreement and *actually* believe (*It's what believers do!*) the truth of what God says about you as revealed in the New Covenant that he has established in himself with everyone who believes. And "believing" is a side effect of hearing the Truth of the Gospel.

"Faith comes by hearing and hearing by the Word of God."

You are accepted in the Beloved. There are *so* many more precious promises that establish you in a glorious identity, in Christ. Every promise God has made is "yes and amen" in Christ, and you are in Christ. These promises enable us to be partakers of the Divine Nature.

Peter wrote:

“For by these (promises) He has granted to us His precious and magnificent promises, so that by them you may become partakers of *the* divine nature, having escaped the corruption that is in the world by lust.” — 2 Peter 1:4
NASB

Jesus here. Daniel calls upon me, and I rush in (as if I ever left). I am Daniel's primary editor. I told him what to toss and what to keep. I alerted him on being accurate in everything he has said. He preaches happy theology. I like it. He participates with me. I showed him this day would come. He had to be patient for twenty-seven years. Until he grew up and became childlike. He highly advises this. He wants to pass on to you the freedom of Galatians 5:1

“It is for freedom that Christ has set you free. Therefore, do be entangled again by a yoke of slavery.”

So Daniel asks me to proofread his stuff. I have to warn you. When he involves me, like he has and will continue to do, Truth bombs will abound. I will set off all kinds of glory bombs! We love to destroy the work of the enemy in your life with the truth. I have no greater joy than when my children walk in truth.

And this part may be in a quote somewhere, or perhaps it landed in the junk drawer of Daniel's Magnum Opus, but it must be said:

“Jesus is not interested in delineation (the action of indicating the exact position of a border or boundary). There are no boundaries in Oneness.” — quote by Daniel Lovett

Oneness Dissolves the illusion of separation.

Note:

There is so much more that could be said about this topic of Oneness that this volume doesn't have room for. That is why this is a series. Stay tuned for *The Mystic One: Volume Two* if you want to continue this journey with me.

I have so much more to say on the subject of Oneness and explore what this means to Jesus.

How do we circumvent misinterpretation of the truth of Oneness with God? What are the deceptive pitfalls and wrong conclusions someone may come to that would ruin them and those who listen to them? How do we avoid heresy?

Someone may assume that I am insisting on something other than what Jesus insists on. I appeal to Jesus in this matter. I only want to say what he is saying on this, and every subject. I have no interest in heresy.

I once found myself being coached by angels in my dream all night long. They repeated the following phrase over and over so I wouldn't forget: "You are not God, but God is you."

They made me aware that they had to frame it this way because of humanity's present difficulty regarding their inability to part ways with their pride or diabolical ego... that false layover identity built on lies and the broken and ignorant paradigms of the "world."

God says, "Let him who boast, boast in this: that he knows me." (Jeremiah 9:24)

“Every word of God is flawless;
he is a shield to those who take refuge in him.
Do not add to his words,
or he will rebuke you and prove you a liar.”
— Proverbs 30:5-6 NIV

But Moses replied, “Are you jealous for my sake? I wish that all the Lord’s people were prophets and that the Lord would put his Spirit upon them all!” — Numbers 11:29 NLT

“If you are ashamed of me and my words while living among sinful and faithless people, then I, the Son of Man, will also be ashamed of you when I make my appearance with my holy messengers in the glorious splendor of my Father!” — Jesus, Mark 8:38 TPT

“Do not stifle the Holy Spirit. Do not scoff at prophecies, but test everything that is said. Hold on to what is good. Stay away from every kind of evil.” — 1 Thessalonians 5:19-22 NLT

Prophetic Words

Epilogue by Yeshua, The Director... (also featuring his Beloved friend and avatar, entity currently known as Daniel Lovett)

Jesus is speaking: “I want to speak to you directly. I have been sharing some things with Daniel lately that have been rocking his world. He never imagined it could be like this. But this is exactly how I have

imagined it with every single one of my children. Daniel is relaxing into this experience and taking to “channeling” ME quite well.⁴² He was struck by seeing “the Spirit of my Father” in Luke chapter 10 today. Elsewhere it is “the Spirit of Yeshua” (Acts 16:7). These are One and the same, for I and my Father are One, just as Daniel and I are One, just as you and I are One.

You may be uncooperative. This stymies our growth. You may suffer from arrested development. You will frustrate yourself right out of existence in this matrix of yours if you are not careful to do exactly as I say. This may sound like a threat... but, it is no more of a threat than when Morpheus sends Neo a phone in a FedEx package and guides him out to that window ledge. (Daniel is working with me in this joint operation prophetic word and is likening this to the movie, The Matrix)

Yes, your destiny is just as tenuous in this valley of decision that you are currently in. You aren’t allowed to be just a spectator anymore. This book is not mere entertainment. It is a calling.

You are my choice, but you must choose your choosing to be the chosen one, Neo. (Yes, I am rolling with Daniel’s choice of metaphor. It speaks, for WE spoke it to them. I have shown Daniel this in his heavenly vision of May 22nd, 2019.) So, do you want to know what WE have to tell you? Red pill or blue pill time...

I am not pulling any punches. Your future depends on you listening closely to what I am about to tell you. The enemies of Christ will soon no longer populate this planet. I will make it a Garden of Eden once again. A new heavens and a new earth are coming... we are right at the door of a Great Unveiling. One could say the Apocalypse is here. But your minds have been poisoned against this word, yes? I am showing Daniel what

⁴² (Good thing we already redeemed the idea of channeling by undeniably linking it to what Jesus said in John 15, and how the branches channel the life of the vine... right?!?)

events must soon take place. It will be a time of testing for the inhabitants of the world... and mass deception.

Stay with me. You mustn't be distracted in coming days. You will hear a voice saying, "This is the way", guiding the journey of your everyday.

And remember this: I have never asked you to walk in fear. Perfect love casts out all fear. Fear-mongers do not speak for me. Speak the truth in love... and love dis-spells all fear. Love removes the spell of fear that has been cast over your psyche. We have much room to grow. (Daniel is uncomfortable with the word "We" in the previous sentence (for my sake), but I want you to know that I am in this with you, remember? I never leave you and never forsake you. Where you go, I go. I take responsibility for you.)

You have become wise to the enemy's ways, now become wise to My Ways.

I told Daniel about the book of Proverbs (I was really speaking about Wisdom). I told him plainly: "This is a class you must pass." Wisdom is how love behaves. And remember this: Love behaves! This is what is meant by "being all things to all people". Your love is always perfectly appropriate to who you are with. And so it shall be when the Spirit of my Father guides your every step, saying, "this is the Way... walk in it".

I want Daniel to pull in his notes from today at this point.

Captain's Log, Stardate: 12192024

Jesus knows how to behave himself. (You can trust him to meet you where you are at and be who he is. He is always Gentle and Humble in heart. Yes, he really wants you to know that. He wants you to know that you can trust him to take you that next step of your journey towards the Light. You shall not be given more than you can handle.)

Jesus: *"Hello and good morning, this is your Captain speaking. I want people to realize that I know them perfectly. I hold the key to every heart. I have solved every equation of the mind. So in that sense, this is a "checkmate"... BUT, it is a checkmate of LOVE.⁴³ You have to, at some point, realize that I am the Physician and you are the patient. Do you see how you try to resolve everything I say in your **own** way? Still addicted to seeing everything from your perspective, are you? You've allowed your culture and the way **you** see things to be your very DNA. But it is a false layover. It's not even a real entity. There actually is no one that you're protecting by doing it your way... and saying "No" to **My** Way.*

*It is time for you to learn Kingdom culture. And **represent**. As you do so, this makes you an apostle. But you're so hung up on titles and labels that you have forgotten the true meaning of what it is I'm asking you to do.*

It's always as simple as LOVE.

"Setting apart Christ as Lord" means always saying "YES" to LOVE.

This is the way of it."

(This is the Way... Well, I, for one, no longer want to explain Jesus away.)

Captains Log, Stardate: 12202024

I am really struggling. Truth be told.

I guess it's hard for me to imagine that I'm on an island (*that's definitely tropical*) all alone with Jesus. And therefore, I can't "tell the truth"?

Poppycock!

⁴³ Agape love is other-centered, self-giving love.

Of course I can tell the truth! His word is backed by his word!
There are precedents set!

One precedent I've been thinking about lately is a book that I can't necessarily even vouch for, where a man filled up notebook after notebook with his conversations with God. I remember watching the documentary about him and his experience with that writing. I wonder how similar his experience is to my own?

The other precedent that I see is the *Jesus Calling* book. I heard that it got flak for "putting words into Jesus' mouth", and that left some people wondering: "If Jesus is really talking, isn't she just writing new Scripture then?"

And then there are the precedents of the book of Isaiah, the book of Jeremiah, the book of Ezekiel and Daniel, etc...

Was *this* what it was like for them?

"And then the word of God came to me..."

Oh, part of me wants to cry with gratitude and humility, and then, more gratitude. The other part of me is tempted to give way to the fear of man. What will the pastor think about this? Are the "pastors" the gatekeepers? Are *they* the "One Mediator between God and man"?

No! We have One Gate and One Gatekeeper... his name is Jesus (Yeshua)! We have One Shepherd, One Pastor, and his name is Jesus! We have one Mediator between God and man, the man, Jesus Christ!

Yeshua is my Pastor! Yeshua is my Master and Commander!
Yeshua is my Good Shepherd and Overseer of my soul!

At the end of the chapter entitled, *The Mystic One*, Jesus spoke to me. It happened last Saturday morning on December 14th, 2024. On the way to that Christmas concert I mentioned, he spoke to me in the car on my drive. He told me some very important things.

I can relate to that verse where it says, "I believe, therefore I speak".

I believe, therefore I speak. I am fully aware of everything the Bible has to say about false prophets (Zechariah 13 comes to mind). I have read His Scripture cover to cover. Yet still, I cannot keep this pent up inside. The floods of Revelation must come. The spirit of prophecy is upon me and within me. Jesus is manifesting himself in and through me. I experience him very intensely... and I love it!

Sometimes, what he has to say is a bit surprising. It's as if he's an actual, real person who has feelings and emotions, thoughts, and words. *Funny thing, that!*

The following is what Jesus said to me on the day that I received my breakthrough of hearing him crystal clear. Here is my Captain's log of those details while in the car on the way to Clintonville, Wisconsin, to play a Christmas concert:

Captain's Log, Stardate: 12142024

Jesus: "WE are tired of catering to a bunch of slackers. A bunch of ignorant and, no, the worst part is, arrogant, brats who get offended every time we ask them to pay attention in class.

It's exhausting dealing with you!

*Do you remember when I (Jesus) said, "How long must I put up with you? How long must I bear with you?" Yes, I was speaking of **you**! In every generation.*

*How does it make you feel to hear that? Does it motivate you to become a better student? What will motivate you to be a better student? The point of this exercise is to make known to you and illustrate the fact that you can, at any time, **choose** to be a better student. When Jesus asks you to follow him, he is asking... asking you to be the **best** student you can be!"*

“Okay, but you’re here now... so I will be faithful to do my part.

*Will you be faithful to do your part... and **listen**?*

Daniel has lots of encouragement and flowery words and stories that will capture your imagination of how good it can be... we know that only the smallest remnant will even pay attention, and even the smallest revenant of those who do, will actually listen.⁴⁴ That’s what we’re dealing with here. How does it change anything to tell you this?

No, instead WE are compelled to play your game and remain quiet instead of confronting you on this matter? All we want to do is to confront you on this matter!

You have your own inner Teacher, the Christ, the Anointing! You don’t need to read Daniel’s book to hear from God. You can read the book I wrote, which has some actual substance... (no offense, Daniel.⁴⁵)

But, you see what I’m getting at? You hear and you know of what I

⁴⁴ (Note: Revenant was a typo, but when I looked it up, there might be something to it... so I left it as is. Dry bones? Anyone? Bueller? My question is “What is involved in listening that is beyond just ‘paying attention’?”)

⁴⁵ None taken... I want to say, but upon further reflection, I am wondering what lessons you have for me in saying this? As if I can’t be a prophet just like any of those in Scripture? As if you could NOT relate Scripture in 2024 through the avatar of Daniel Lovett? As if Isaiah or Jeremiah are a cut above me according to the One who is no respecter of persons? As if God stopped speaking with the twelve apostles? As if you and your word has no substance, Yeshua, just because it is 2000 years later? As if your words must bow to the words you spoke before... and now we are getting to the point, are we not?

“Yes, My words will bow to my words, but there always must be a first time for those words, right?”

Yes, I see your point. So... going out on a limb here... Are there words you will share with me for humanity that are “firsts”? “Great question Daniel... and THIS is how you wrestle with God!” (Currently no answers on these questions. Just another question I get to wrestle with for perhaps another decade.)

Speak.

Yes, everyone has their own Teacher (with a capital "T") living within them... let them hear him!

Precisely.

So, what sort of reminder could be put in place here as a goad that they will once again, kick against, no doubt?

Daniel (speaking of himself in third person) is humbled that he would be even counted worthy of relating a message from you (Yeshua) with any degree of accuracy, and yet anything less than 100% accuracy would be absolutely criminal! "If anyone speaks, let him speak the oracles of God." Nothing less... nothing more!

Lives hang in the balance. And you want to be an author, Daniel? You want to make a living selling books, Daniel?

Uhhh... yes?

Well, alrighty then, let's get on with it.

If they listened to me, they will also listen to you. Are you all right with that kind of neglect?

Yes.

Be careful what you ask for, Daniel.

You have asked for a prophetic gift... so you will stand in on my counsel. I've spared you from becoming a false prophet and a false teacher.

We actually do like how the book is coming together. But you know there's no glory in that. There's only glory in giving Glory. We share with you the ability to worship the Father in spirit and in truth. I give you the privilege of approaching his throne of grace and mercy to receive help in your time of need. That goes for the whole lot of you!

Daniel is simply a cymbal for the whole lot of you. (He thought it would be funny to misspell symbol.) The thing is, you have got to realize that I am not a tyrant. I AM easy to please!

You're dealing with a pushover Papa. So interject your humor! Do what you think is best! You are an equal participant in the life of God!

Equal among US, you're an honored member of US! I AM never denies Himself. God says: "I do not deny you!"

For all our strong speech, you have won US over and captivated US! You are beautiful to US.⁴⁶

We could go on and on about how smitten we are with you, but we do have some helpful things to say. We have some helpful things to remind you of. The Teacher has things he wants to stir up in you... Questions mostly.

"Restore unto me the joy of your salvation."

We hear your heart's prayer.

Expounding the questions as a way of invoking mystery in you! You'll never be bored again! That is, as long as you remember to be grateful.

Thank your Teacher.

Leave him an apple on his desk.

"Get to know me", Jesus says. "Come and learn of me and see that I am gentle and humble in heart." Read Matthew 11:28-30 in every translation.

Don't censor me anymore. Respect and honor my voice. This is what the fear of the Lord is all about, remember? Having regard for me? Listening to me? Like Mary did, sitting at my feet. Her honorable place will never be taken from her. You shall forever have an honored place at my feet as well.

Some of you sassy brats don't care for that.

Do you know where the door is? Or must we show you?

Daniel wants to say, Are you in or are you out?

⁴⁶ (The capitalizations will be inconsistent, but there is a lesson in the capitalized "US". Ask US sometime about it... how about now? (I ask) You wrote about it... tell the whole story and they will see for themselves soon enough.)

"I'm in Jesus!"

Good! Then we shall proceed, as planned.

Jesus is telling Daniel that he never has to explain himself to anyone. Daniel never has to apologize for what Jesus prompts him to say. (God is showing me that he will always provide those who will sharpen "him").

"Jesus, I'm putting a very fine apple on your desk, and I'm very grateful to be in your class. Thank you for taking me on as a student, as a Padawan to the Great Master Jedi Yeshua. Do you mind if I call you a Jedi?"

It might serve useful.

And now, back to some of your fun stories that will bless people's hearts. I will be here and I will come through the messages.

I want to emphasize some points here:

I honor you. I care about the things you care about. It more than touches my heart. Everything that moves you, moves me. I love who you love. I love and enjoy what you love.

<Daniel's thinking went dark just now.>

*Daniel does not quite yet see how honor purifies you. He does not yet realize the effectual nature of my Atonement. You could even bring in, at this point, your blog about atonement or wax eloquent about the New Covenant. It's **all** worth meditating on.*

I want you to know that I always have a lightness to my heart, and JOY infuses my perspective. So if we could please maintain that for the sake of everyone reading this, that would be most excellent, Daniel.

"They shall all be taught by God, and no one will ever have to tell his neighbor, 'Know the LORD.' For they all shall know me from the least to the greatest." As if there is such a thing... as the "least" and the

“greatest”.

(He will put the last first, and the first last, just to prove it to you. That, “God is no respecter of persons.”)

Yes, I will challenge your every broken perspective and all the shallow ways in which you view most everything. Papa’s LOVE will clear up all matters.

Do you want to be really “great”? Get great at loving the way my Father LOVES!

Or, suffer a regrettable legacy that your character forged in the history of US.

It is to your and OUR advantage to learn LOVE.

(Daniel is thinking: “Yes, it is... I certainly agree with that. Who of us does not concur with the Savior on this point?)

Beginnings...

Does it feel like you’re starting over each new day? Well, that is because it is... and you are!

You have a wonderful opportunity to reinvent yourself at every moment of every day by making a choice. The best choice is always provided to you. The Best choice is the easiest choice. Because it’s the right choice. You might miss it. That will only serve as a learning opportunity to refine and prepare you for the next right choice. The next best choice... is to LOVE.

I came home right after my concert and sat down at my computer and began to write (still December 14th):

Alright, I’m back. (A portion of what I write next is a question in which I open a can of worms that I don’t feel like explaining to you all, dear reader, because it would require you much grace to understand, so I

took it out.)

Jesus: I am always here. Any of you could tune in to my voice at any time.

Yes, but they won't like it.

But what I say is what they need to hear. Yes, I know that I will undo their pride.

Is this really what you are saying? I want to hear you clearly. I don't want to mess this up. I realize that people's souls are at stake here.

Don't you believe that I have them? Give up your savior complex. I can make your book go dark. It will never see the light of day. I can also promote your book so the whole world knows that I spoke with (entity currently known as) Daniel Lovett. (Hmmm... I like how you snuck that parenthetical statement in there.) You know there is something deeper going on here. You are "well-informed," aren't you? How is that going for you?

Previously, I had wanted to cry... like, all the time. That was how well it was going. People rejected me. I don't, or at least hadn't, experienced their favor... but I will be honest, it really only matters if I experience your favor. As long as you are smiling and having fun, then... I'm okay.

BUT NOW, I am experiencing the abundant life! Every moment swells with peace and satisfaction and joy! I could stay up all night talking or writing about how good you are and how good I have it with you. I have learned how to abide. I have learned the secret of how to fear the Lord (which means, for the sake of my readers, "to

have regard for You” — just as John said, “He must increase and I must decrease”).

I have learned how to remain in the flow state of resting in my Sabbath REST of Jesus. I’d much rather talk about this and you than anything else! I wish to elevate every conversation to talk about my Jesus and marvel in the mysteries of the New Covenant!

You have reigned victorious in my life. You have won my heart, and I surrender completely to you. I am secure in your love and have this testimony: “I am my Beloved’s and He is mine.” Isn’t that something?

And now I can write a book that is safe for my children, and all of Your children. That is who God made me. Someone who is safe for children and all my sisters and brothers. I will only uplift. I will only bless and never curse. I am blessed to be a blessing to the world.

I want to say this as honestly as I can:

You can have me all to yourself. You know if it would be best for me, and them, if I went dark again... and by that I mean, obscure... unseen... hidden. I don’t have to parade myself before them anymore. Trying to get their attention and respect, just so I could tell them how real you are and how much you love them. It’s exhausting.

If I were to tell you my opinion of what is going on, I think that it’s easier for them to reject me than for them to deal with what I AM is insisting on... that you speak with me.

I understand... More than you know. We could do it your way I suppose...

Wait, wait, wait, wait!!! I don’t want **my** way.⁴⁷ I don’t trust me!

⁴⁷ Later... upon reading this, Fezzik’s line from Princess Bride comes to mind: “Which one my way?”

Therein lies the problem... don't you see? You don't trust you. How can you trust me? What if you are right, Danie... entity currently known as Daniel? (This is going to get tedious.)

So what now?

I am sending you. I'll make it simple on you. Your Master is sending you to them, whether they listen or fail to listen, for I know how stubborn they are... is this sounding familiar? Yes, because people don't really change. It is impossible for people to change... But, what is impossible for men IS possible for God. With God, ALL things are possible!

*You shall "channel" me. I like the term... I do... It's edgy, it's scandalous... It's controversial... like ME! Have you **read** the Gospel of John?!? That will get their attention. Yeah, isn't that just like me, to draw a line in the sand?*

"If you reject Daniel, you are rejecting me",⁴⁸ Jesus says. Daniel (you know, the entity) is not making this up. I am sticking my neck out for him. I am defending him against the bullies.

I am commanding the bullies: "Stop it!!! Leave him alone!!!" (I give him dreams about this!)

And if anyone does attack you, Daniel, you can at least know that it won't be my doing.⁴⁹ Is that alright with you?

Hahaha... yes, umm... that is copasetic with me... but yikes! I didn't really want anyone to reject you on account of me. I'll try to be on my best behavior so as to mitigate the disaster that will most certainly ensue. People are addicted to rejecting one another. It's an epidemic down here.

⁴⁸ Matthew 10:40 - Jesus extends this to everyone who belongs to him.

⁴⁹ Isaiah 54:15-17

I know. Let's do something about that.

I truly didn't know how to respond... It's just under a week later, and I've been geeking out over this *all week*. And the transmissions keep coming.

He tells me he wants to converse with you, too! This kind of connection and conversation is available to *all* of you!

It truly is not about "me". I'm not sure if I am interested in maintaining a sense of "me" anymore. I'd rather get lost in the ocean of Papa's love, like Yeshua did and does.

I've been as tense as a cat as she stalks her prey for a bit too long.

I am open to hearing from Jesus right now, and so I channel him once more:

Jesus: *"Exhausting, isn't it? Caring so much about what another might think? And you have eight billion plus options, and that's only counting the living, and that's only counting the souls on planet Earth... that you know about.*

The fear of man will never get you closer to my heart. The fear of man is a trap.

That is all for now.

<Later>

Do you see what's happening? What wisdom do you have that I don't give you? And then you take credit for it and feel a little clever and so stymy (prevent and hinder the progress of) EVERYONE! Arrested development for ALL, all because you wanted to be great and "someone" in their eyes? This is not the Way. How about you boast of your weakness so that the glory of the Lord may rest upon you?"

“All right, Jesus, you want me to confess this and that and everything to everyone?”

No, that's not exactly what I mean.

I mean that you acknowledge that you don't know what the heck you're doing. You must confess the truth that you're a bumbling toddler and you're being guided and led and fed my words... just like my Son Yeshua was a toddler, completely dependent, guided and led and fed my words.

Your “weakness” that you confess is to recognize that you are ignorant. You don't know what is best at any given moment... my Father does. (Moses didn't feed you in the wilderness, my Father did.) You are but a babe.

This is what humility is:

Acknowledging your absolute dependence on El Shaddai... and people ought to know by now what that means, and no, it does not mean “God of the mountains” or “God Almighty” even though, sure, your MAMA is Almighty.

I AM your All Sufficient One. You ALL suckle at my breast for every moment's nourishment. Both physically and spiritually, and emotionally and mentally.

Daniel here. God's been giving me this picture of this character in the Star Wars series, Andor. First of all, it must be said that this applies in some ways to *every* character, but one particular character highlights this very well. He's privileged. He is arrogant. He fails to recognize the wonder of the story that he's in. He is Haman. A man created to be caught and killed.

He is a picture of your pride. He would betray you and have you executed to pacify and puff up his pride and position. He is King Saul, murdering an entire town of priests and all their wives and children and babies, not to mention all the best of their cattle

and sheep. He didn't even spare the best of the sheep to "sacrifice to the Lord" on that occasion. *That* is a picture of *your* pride. You underestimate the damage it does. And yet, this Saul was also among (and one of) the prophets. He, too, possessed a spirit man who remained above all of his own delusions. He, too, possessed a core that is Perfect LOVE!!!

(Note: When I heard that pride is a self defense mechanism, it freed me to extend compassion to myself. I began to speak to myself: "You don't feel safe Daniel. That is why you retreat from connection into pride." But connection is the point. Vulnerability is the point. Me trusting you is the point. You trusting me is the point. US building trust in One another... This is the WAY.)

Yes, let's talk about the other Saul now, you know, the one who hunted followers of the Way, in the same fashion as the SS of the Nazi Regime hunted the Jews. (Same spirit, you know. Daniel just spent an hour reading a Wikipedia page about the task force within the Nazi SS. Seven regiments of 500 or so men responsible for exterminating 1.3 million of my people from the earth... "One more for the angel makers..." Ask me about that story sometime.)

Saul had help, you know. Neighbors would turn them in. Mothers and fathers would turn in their own children. Siblings ratted out their own brothers and sisters. Remember when I told you that your enemies would be among those of your own household?

So, what are you doing, man or woman of God? Are you trying to gain a following? Do you parcel out breadcrumbs to your followers, and then, if they pay you, they'll get more breadcrumbs?

Call no man Teacher! You have One Teacher, the Christ! I will give you ALL a feast, every day!!! I will demonstrate the generosity of God when it comes to daily bread!

You know what? There's no delineation between Daniel and I.

We are experiencing the reality of our Oneness. Where does Jesus stop and Daniel begin? Jesus is not interested in any delineation. There are no borders between us, for we are One.

So, entity currently known as Yeshua is speaking through entity currently known as Daniel.

And yes, there's something marvelous going on here because this is what I intend for every single one of you! You shall *all* be taught by God! You shall *all* experience this Oneness until it fills the whole Earth! This is a book that cuts.

It cuts through all the B.S.!⁵⁰

And Daniel gets all of this as soon as he lets go of the fear of man and surrenders to the inevitable of what I've called him to do... even despite the severity of the warnings I give for false prophets (see Zechariah 13).

(As a teachable moment, I will now share the “freaking out” thoughts of the entity currently known as Daniel Lovett):

I see two options. Either I am deceived and this prophetic gift is from the enemy who appears as an angel of light in Daniel's life, who has no problem whatsoever joyfully acknowledging that Yeshua the Messiah, the Anointed ONE, who came in the flesh, is Lord and LORD (*I AM*) to the glory of God the Father and believes that Yeshua died on a cross to reconcile ALL to himself and rose from the dead (I mean we ought to all celebrate that this deceptive spirit has gotten himself properly saved to come to this point!), Or, I have the Spirit of the Father, and the Spirit of the Son, the Christ or “Anointing”, I have the Holy Spirit of Truth who is leading me into all Truth!

So basically, Satan is now an adamant follower of the Lord

⁵⁰ God talks to me like this sometime! When I was dragging my feet about publishing this book, God said, “👁️’, or get off the pot.” Awesome prophet guy confirmed it.

Jesus Christ, OR somehow this entity currently known as Daniel Lovett is vetted by Yeshua and authorized to speak for him as a legitimate prophet. (Daniel is sheepishly protesting at this point saying, "It's not about me...") Yeshua did tell me point blank: "I give you my authority." (All believers are ALL ambassadors of Christ with His authority!) And he told me, "You are my apostle." (Ideally, you should know what this means by now! Instead of just assuming I feel grandiosed by a title!)

They are going to murder me, you know. The religious establishment, whom I have served all my life, is going to crucify me! <metaphorically, I hope... LOL!> Jesus showed me this. (It seems this is the price you have to pay to be a true prophet.)

In fact, "they" (*who are "they" anyway? They are other versions of ME*) are forgiven already! (That's what I have to say about it.) I have no enemies... only friends! Try reading Romans 5:11! I like it in the NLT version.

People are going to be set free in this Great Awakening, and there may be people who are going to resist ME and are going to find culprits to blame. My name will come up. I will be added to their "listofhereticstoavoid.com". Things may escalate. Remember how I showed Paul all that he would suffer for my name's sake? Remember that? Remember? ...And he said, "YES"!

So... Jesus asks, do *you* want to join the movement and "be counted as sheep to be slaughtered" when I begin to reveal the sons and daughters of God?. (See Romans 8)

Sounds great! Sign me up!

Jesus: "Do you think I have to validate ("*demonstrate or support the truth or value of*") myself to the Father all the time? I have no insecurities in his LOVE. You shall have none soon enough as well. You don't have to justify your existence. I created you. Remain on the deserted island (*that definitely happens to be tropical!*) with ME. WE call this the Holy of Holies. You also may call it: The Secret

Place. It's where you heal the mind. Everything else will follow. But you must remain steadfast. *I AM* your authority. Let me get the door when anyone comes knockin' ... Got it?

Your job is not to judge another. You take your eyes off of me when you do, you know. Only see the gold in others... the gold that is others.

I am about to ignite my tribe. You shall see the fulfillment of your dream. (*Referencing "Welcome to Your Awakening" chapter*).

And so it begins.

You are the light of the world. A lamp is put on its stand so that it gives light to all who are in the house. Jesus was a man just like us. How does this relate to us? Well, it does tend to take the excuses off the table, now doesn't it?

We can walk as Jesus walked. We can love as Jesus loves.

I am reminding Daniel of another dream I gave him:

I am Jesus in the dream. The Earth is a vast house, and there is a deadly gas leak. The house is dark. I run around the house trying to rescue people and get them outside to safety. *Everyone* is hiding from me, and demons are helping to hide people away from me. I watch as a woman succumbs to the gas poisoning and falls down dead, collapsing right in front of me. I turn to the Father and say, despairing, "It seems that they are going to get away with everything!"

As if I was unable to save them?

Jesus had to trust and submit to his Father's plan. Like Doctor Strange, calculating all the variables in the multiverse of possibilities and seeing that there is only *One* Way, Father sees the only Way to save us all. And so he sends his own unique One, His One and Only Son. (*Let's call him the Mystic One, just for funsies.*)

Jesus be like: "I must be tortured to death to win them over? *Really?*" His mortal man self, who is just like any one of us in every way, says, "Is there, by any chance, any *other* way, Papa? *Please* tell me there is a plan B here... *No?* But, not what I will, may your will be done."

Okay. I will do it, Abba. I must be Neo and bring an end to the darkness (Mr. Smith)⁵¹ that has overcome the world. I do this for LOVE of my Papa... for the LOVE of *our* PAPA!

I am moved to tears at this point as I refer, in my mind, to Jesus' words the end of the Gospel of John: "But go find my brothers and tell them, 'I am ascending to my Father and your Father, to my God and your God.'" (John 20:17 NLT)

We have been fully reconciled. Jesus did what he set out to do. It is finished!

So bring me back to the beginning... I want to hear the story again and again and again. I will go to sleep and wake up to my Papa's smile all over again... and again... and again.

Welcome to your Awakening!

Ps. I include all these Prophetic words as a "teaching moment" displaying how his voice came through to me. This is an example of how his word might come through for you. I hear Jesus say: "You are next!"

⁵¹ In the Matrix, after consuming the Oracle and dominating the whole world, Smith is in his final epic confrontation with Neo and says: "I stand here, right here, and I'm supposed to say something. I say, 'Everything that has a beginning has an end, Neo.'"

"What? What did I just say?"

The darkness (Mr. Smith) is now afraid. Of course the darkness is afraid! It's end is inevitable. For WE are discovering who WE are!

He wants to open your ears to hear him! He always dreamed of his church as those who hear and value his voice! An Ekklesia (assembly of called out ones — typically translated as “church”) in which every single one of you is a prophet — “One who hears and speaks MY words”, Jesus says, “Just as I heard and spoke the Father’s words.”

ACTIVATION:

Begin a journal if you haven’t done so already. Fill up notebooks with what Jesus speaks to you. Record your dreams from Jesus and allow him to interpret them, for he says: “I AM *Here* for you. My Presence is *Always* present.”

Post Script:

I want to include a dream from my journal that the Lord gave me shortly after recording these prophetic words from Jesus:

12242024

Christmas Eve. The book is “done”? I just have to wrap up a few things... take out a few inside jokes between Jesus and me that I imagine would unnecessarily scandalize someone. And finish the chapter on Method Acting. I think that is going to be gold.

My dream:

I’m standing in a council with Jesus and his angels. Jesus shows me that his words are refined in the fire seven times... this is... completely. He showed me that his words are the SAFE and best WAY of all. As he is going over this with me, and I hate to even admit this, but I thought it was boring?!?

Immediately, I am out flying over a darkened wilderness. I see a group of people, running and hiding, desperately trying to survive while being hunted. I am in the land of the shadow of death.

(This place is very much like that land represented in the movie series *Loki*, where the rejected of the multiverse go to wait out their eventual demise as the smoke monster beast eventually comes and feeds on you.)

The people are being hunted by two huge, fierce, and gaunt predatory black wolves in this darkened wilderness. These two beasts were like those in the movie *Eternals*, bred to depopulate a planet. We'll call them Gorkhoo and Beldur — fear and dread.

I had an omniscient view above these wolves, watching them on their hunt, sniffing out their prey. And then I was the one being hunted. I was on the run with these people and felt the dread and apprehension. You didn't bother getting to know each other. The others were just competition for survival.

They hunted us and picked us off one by one, and as one falls, this simply gave the survivors a bit more time to dread their own eventual demise. I walked back to watch the wolves as they were devouring one who had recently been killed. They feasted on the organs first and didn't move on from the corpse until it was entirely consumed. The absolute sense of dread settled into my heart as I watched.

"Will I be faster and more clever than the one next to me? Will I survive longer than he or she? And to what end? I am doomed. There is no hope."

I awoke.

A few Scriptures immediately sprang to mind. The one that stood out the most was the promises of Psalm 91 for those who

love and trust God:

“You will not fear the terror of the night, nor the arrow that flies by day, nor shall you dread the plague that stalks in darkness, nor the disaster that strikes at midday.” — Psalm 91:5-6

Jesus: My words are a pleasant meal... warm daily fresh baked bread 🍞



I meet people where they are at, Daniel. My words are always fitting... as one poet wrote, “Like apples of gold in settings of silver, is a word spoken at the proper time.” — Proverbs 25:11 NASB

“I don’t always just quote myself, you know. I have things to say beyond what has been said. Don’t you remember what I told you?”

“I have so much more to tell you, but you don’t have the capacity to hear it now, but when the Spirit of Truth comes, he will lead you into all truth.”

The Spirit of Truth speaks. It is time to listen!

I remember with fondness whenever my disciples spend their time receiving my word... they are my prophets... as are you. You shall receive my words. You all shall be taught by God. It will sort itself out. Of course you will be tested. You will be found out when you get it wrong. When you listen to me, however, you won’t get it wrong. You shall learn to hear my voice.”

Update 04162025: I wanted to end with a warning. ⚠️

I spent the last three months in the wasteland described above. I ended up there psychologically because I rejected Jesus’ Way for religion. I suppose I was trying to fit in at church and do whatever I thought they wanted me to do. Basically, I gave way to the fear of

man. It was ugly. It happened the following way:

I was playing drums on the worship team for a special Friday night service with an out-of-town guest speaker. Earlier that day I had a phone conversation with someone who talked about engaging in a season of consecration to the Lord which opened up some profound spiritual experiences. I wondered what more I could experience. I pondered all that day what it would look like for me to “be more consecrated” to the Lord to experience more of him.

As I thought about this while drumming, Jesus appeared right in front of me, standing on the floor below the stage, looking at me. He telepathically answered the questions of my mind. He said, “How can you be any *more* consecrated than you already are?”

I could not discern his meaning because I insisted on conjuring up a guilty feeling over a particular incident (that had long been forgiven and under the seal of his blood). I doubted his word.

I went back to my seat after worship and thought about Todd White. He always went forward for prayer to receive whatever anointing he could in his effort to ‘chase after God’. Why shouldn’t I do the same? I tried to come up with anything I could repent of to use as an excuse to go forward for prayer. Jesus again stood next to me and told me, “Well, I suppose you can go that direction if you want to.”

He seemed to indicate that I was choosing religion *over* him... yikes!

I left Jesus and went forward anyway!?! I suppose I was trying to submit to the leadership of the church. I reasoned that if the pastor trusted this man to come here and give us what God has, that I should trust him and desire whatever that was. Aren’t I supposed to submit to the leadership of Jesus’ church?

But my actions were NOT in obedience to Jesus. It was quite the opposite, actually. I “left” Jesus that day. His prophetic voice

became quiet and distant once again for some time, and I suffered for it.

All that to say:

Often, what we call “religion” might just be THE single greatest obstacle to your relationship with the Lord Jesus Christ. As Jesus said, “Be on your guard against the yeast of the Pharisees and Sadducees.” (Matthew 16:6 NIV)

Captain's Log, Stardate 06252025

Jesus informed me this morning...

Master Jedi Yeshua says that he likes to play. This is what he does best. He is a continual feast of JOY!!! Master Jedi Yeshua loves to play with Daniel.

To set up what I am about to share, we need a little context.

(Begin Backstory)

While serving at Gospel for Asia, my friend Rob told stories of how he would share Jesus as he toured with the band, the Grateful Dead. He spoke of Rainbow  Gatherings, where ten thousand or more hippies gather in the woods for a week around the fourth of July and would pray for world peace. This put the desire in my heart that I would someday be able to minister at a Rainbow Gathering.

In the Summer of 2019, just after my Awakening experience (which I will gladly tell you about in the next volume), the Rainbow Gathering came to the North woods of Wisconsin.

Before I could go, Jesus and I knew that the religious spirit needed to be exorcized out of me. The afternoon before I went, I was distraught about some religious judgmental attitudes in my heart. I felt plagued by a religious demon. The spirit of shame and

pride, that the spirit of religion feeds on, had me in their clutches.

I went into a room to pray. Jesus sent me an angel who appeared to me (I will refrain from giving you a description as it will likely be more than you can handle). *What name shall I give him?* I will call him... “the humble sage”.

The humble sage doesn’t even want to be capitalized. He *knows* that all glory goes to Master Jedi Yeshua whom he came to teach me about.

Now, the humble sage comes to me, levitating in front of me, eye to eye, in my house. I may have felt shame because I turned away so as not to look him in the eye. This “angel” reached out and took my cheek and moved it back and said telepathically, ‘No. Look at me.’”

So I look him in the eye.

He says, “I have come to give you an understanding regarding the book of Proverbs.”

(I had been previously told on May 22nd, 2019, by the angels to, “Study the book of Proverbs. This is a class you must pass.” I did spend *some* time in Proverbs... like the half-hearted, discouraged student that I perceived myself to be.)

He continued, “Proverbs represents Wisdom. Wisdom is the Son, saying, “I have made vows to my Beloved”. The Beloved is his Father.”

“Wisdom is how love behaves.”

(End Backstory)

This morning Jesus gave me an update as to why he had told me that I could not be more consecrated than I already am. He first reminded me of his word:

“Who has believed our report and to whom has the arm of the LORD been revealed?”

He then told me, "You cannot be more consecrated because I cannot be more consecrated, and you are in me. I have made vows to my Beloved, and I keep my vows to my Beloved. I am faithful, and you get in on *my* faithfulness. I am righteous, and you get in on my righteousness. You *are* my righteousness. Instead of being oppressed by fear, shame, and pride... and all that accompanies that way of unbelief, you get in on my Way of Faith and experience one blessing after another, from faith to faith, from glory to ever-increasing glory, and favor heaped upon more favor. Without fail... for my love never fails.

Remember who you are, for you are intrinsic to me and I am intrinsic to you. You are my fractal. Not a broken fraction of *I AM* but the fractal of the fullness of *I AM*. Preach the fullness and you shall have it. Remember me telling you that?

You are as consecrated as *I AM*.

I am as consecrated as *I AM*.

*"Created one, you have no place to argue,
Against the Mystic One who made you."*

“Jesus Jesus Jesus. That’s the message.” —Bill Wanasek

Method Acting

Postlude by Daniel Lovett

Bruce Marchiano played the role of Jesus in *The Visual Bible: Matthew*. The film takes you, word for word, through the whole Gospel of Matthew in the New International Version. As he prepared for the role of Jesus, Bruce would take his German Shepherd out for a run of five to seven miles every day in the rainy month of December, 1992. He relates the story:

“As I was running, I prayed, ‘Please Lord, fill me with you! Fill me with you! Please Lord! Please, Lord Jesus! Give me compassion! Please, Lord God, give me the quality of mercy!’ I prayed this way for hours. I cannot explain to you my level of desperation for him.”

He had seven weeks to memorize every word of Jesus from the Gospel of Matthew and do a deep dive study into its context. Words failed him to describe this profound, holy experience. As he prayed, the Lord sent him the message:

“Play every scene as a love scene.”

And so he did. Jesus took Bruce to Psalm 139:13 as the basis for how he would behave toward everyone he interacted with.

“For you formed my inmost being. You knit me together in my mother’s womb.” (WEB)

“This is your relationship to these people,” Jesus told him. “You

(as Jesus) hand-formed each one of them. These are your babies. What good thing would you deprive from your baby? It's as if you cut out your own heart and give it to them. Multiply that a kazillion times because you have to understand that God's love is *perfect*."

If we only knew...

I have never seen such joy and love portrayed on the face of Jesus in any Jesus film until Bruce's "performance"! He laughed with his disciples! His smile lit up people's lives! It was beautiful!

Watching this inspired me to organize watch parties of this film with my Christian friends. I decided to memorize the entire Sermon on the Mount in the same translation. I began the process of working toward memorizing all the rest of Christ's words in red throughout the Gospels.

During the Kingdom Manifesto (Sermon on the Mount) scene, Jesus used props that had the whole crowd laughing. At one point, he held a walking staff up to his eye and pointed to it when delivering the lines:

"Why do you look at the speck of sawdust in your brother's eye and pay no attention to the plank in your own eye? How can you say to your brother, 'Let me take the speck out of your eye,' when all the time there is a plank in your own eye? You hypocrite, first take the plank out of your own eye, and then you will see clearly to remove the speck from your brother's eye." — Matthew 7:3-5 NIV

I secretly longed for the day when I, too, could perhaps play the role of Jesus in a Passion play. I grew out my beard and grew my hair out, like the Renaissance Jesus.⁵²

⁵² *Jesus once told me that his hair was actually short as was the practical custom of first century Jewish men... Oh well, I don't mind looking like a hippie.*

Bruce would have such profound emotions come over him during filming, he would break down and sob as Jesus manifested himself in and through him. When it came to the scene when Bruce delivered the rebuke to the teachers of the law, I had never, to my mind, ever seen such a scene captured on film that so authentically represented the Lord Jesus as this.

I am absolutely convinced that *Jesus* himself showed up to play himself in Bruce Marchiano in that moment (and throughout the whole film, for that matter). Oh, the *passion* he displayed! His heart broke as he sternly rebuked the religious establishment with the fierce love and words flowing from Papa:

“Woe to you, teachers of the law and Pharisees, you hypocrites! You shut the door of the kingdom of heaven in people’s faces. You yourselves do not enter, nor will you let those enter who are trying to.” — Matthew 23:13 NIV⁵³

It was the way Bruce portrayed this scene that so gripped my heart. At the end of the scene, the religious leaders walk away offended, thoroughly committed now to murder him. After they left, Jesus collapsed to the ground, overwhelmed and exhausted from the emotions that had come through him.

Jesus softly speaks, now weeping:

“Jerusalem, Jerusalem, you who kill the prophets and stone those sent to you, how often I have longed to gather your children together, as a hen gathers her chicks under her wings, and you were not willing. Look, your house is left to you desolate. For I tell you, you will not see me again until you say, ‘Blessed is he who comes in the name of the Lord.’”

⁵³ *May this never describe us! May we never become an obstacle for anyone to enter the Kingdom of “righteousness, peace, and joy in the Holy Spirit”*

His disciples look at him in total shock, every one of them thinking, “*That... was intense!*” Jesus reaches out for comfort from his disciples, and John rushes to him helping Jesus to his feet.

——<end scene>——

“Cut!” The director says, and you can tell he is a bit choked up. You look closer and you see tears in his eyes. Many among the crew are wiping tears from their eyes as well, visibly acknowledging that something really special had just happened.

“*Please* tell me you got that!” The director yells to the lead camera.

“Yep! Got it!”⁵⁴

Bruce, and the film crew team behind this project, had sought Jesus involvement and earnestly prayed for hours, beginning at four each morning until the shoot for that day. The result: Jesus was clearly involved. My question is, “*How* involved? Did Jesus himself show up in the avatar of Bruce to re-present *himself*?”

We could go into a very interesting conversation at this point about method acting. I took quite a fascinated interest in Jim Carrey’s method acting experience when he played the role of Andy Kaufman. Jim said that Andy himself showed up to star in his own movie, *Man on the Moon*. The subsequent documentary about him hosting the soul of Andy Kaufman for that season of filming was fascinating... and somewhat disturbing on a certain level. I truly believe he *did* host the “real” Andy Kaufman.

⁵⁴ My imagination of how it went down

After that peculiar and disturbing experience, Jim Carrey went through a season of spiritual awakening. He came to see that we are all method actors in our own right. He realized that “Jim Carrey” was simply just another character he played. He has many brilliant things to say about that season in his life.

At the very end of the documentary, *Jim & Andy: The Great Beyond*, Jim said something I find very profound. He said, “I wonder what would happen if I decided to just *be* Jesus.” Then Jim Carrey smiles, lifts a mug of tea to his lips, and takes a sip.

What a great line! What if we all did that? What would happen if we all decided to just *be* Jesus? What if we followed Bruce’s example and became so intent and desperate for Jesus to manifest himself in and through us?

May we all live out the revelation of “Christ in us the hope of glory”.

Let’s revisit Saul’s encounter with Jesus from chapter one. Let’s take a deeper look at *how* Jesus said what he said to Saul...

Jesus: “Saul, Saul, why are you persecuting me?”

I once imagined Yeshua as grief-stricken when he said this. You hear a certain agony in his voice as Jesus “weeps with those who weep” and expresses his bond with all the suffering of his followers that Saul has caused by his delusions and misspent life.

Maybe... But, you know what? As I thought and prayed about it, I think this might be the wrong way to read it.

I think Yeshua related this, and his other lines to Paul that day, with a certain confidence and serenity of One who has already resolved the issue at hand.

Imagine being Saul in this moment.

You are in the Presence of One who is impossible to offend. You

are in the Presence of One who could never think an unloving thought about you because no unloving thought about you exists in His heart. He is perfectly showing Papa's LOVE... for *you*. Yeshua exhibited serenity *as* the perfect calm in the eye of the hurricane. His Presence is Complete and Perfect Peace.

"Who are you, Lord?" A completely bewildered Saul at least knows enough to call him "Lord". In the presence of His Holiness, Saul's paradigm just received a rewrite. He is back to square one... knowing nothing. A complete babe. His religious defenses were obliterated in a single moment. One pure moment in the Presence of Yeshua can do that.

"I AM Yeshua, whom you are persecuting," Jesus responds.

Jesus then references a Scripture to Saul, "It is hard for you to kick against the goads", quoting the wisdom of Solomon:

"The words of the wise are like goads, their collected sayings like firmly embedded nails—given by one shepherd." — Ecclesiastes 12:11 NIV

Saul is thunderstruck. 'I not only know nothing,' he surely thought, 'Yeshua is revealing to me that I have never learned how love behaves. He holds up a mirror and shows me my hate-filled heart. He makes me despise myself at how painfully unloving I have become, but I don't even have time for my own regrets. The LOVE that I just experienced has just washed me clean as the driven snow.'

He was left with one ANSWER: *'Obviously this is all about Love, for I have encountered the Living embodiment, the Logos, of LOVE!!!'*

It is as if he is saying to you, (Saul), “*T’was nothing but a trifle — of course I forgive you, my child. Now, I have work for you to do. You are my chosen. I choose you and I am going to work with you. We are going to turn the world upside down... together. You okay with that? ...Of course you are!*”

Jesus chose *the* Pharisee⁵⁵ of Pharisees as his apostle (lit. “one who is sent”). Saul, known henceforth as Paul, becomes *the* apostle of Jesus to the Gentiles.

Remember when Jesus sent Ananias to Saul? Thank God this man lived surrendered to Jesus! I imagine he had just finished praying (because the Spirit prompted him to), “Lord, I’ll do anything for you. *Anything*. I want to serve you!”

“Well... there is this one thing you could do for me...”

And he did it!

Ananias is soon in the presence of this man who had come with official papers from the leading religious leaders to arrest *him*, and he says, “Brother Saul, receive your sight.”

And then, something like scales fell from his eyes!

May “something like scales” fall from our spiritual eyes right now! May we see Jesus and look upon his glory continually. May we daily experience, as a coheir of Christ, *his* beautiful relationship with his Father. Cuz that is what we get in on!

“But when God, who set me apart from my mother’s womb and called me by His grace, was pleased to reveal His Son in me so that I might preach Him...” — Apostle Paul, Galatians 1:15-16

⁵⁵ “Pharisee” is not a curse word, you know... Nicodemus, whom you will read about in John chapter three, was a leader among the Pharisees too, as were many of Christ’s early and most valuable followers.

Me too!

May it please God to reveal His Son in me, too! This is more than just “hosting His presence,” this is honoring his identity in us and *as* US in the Reality of: “Christ in me the hope of glory.”

Let’s all say it together:

“Me too!”

"And now I commend you to God and to the word of his grace which is able to build you up and give you the inheritance among all those who are sanctified." — Act 20:32 ESV

— Dedication —

I hereby dedicate this book to Jesus, my best mate. He told me all my dreams would come true. He told me that he has set me up for success. He's told me lots of things. I believe him. His friendship and how our relationship is developing is the single greatest best dream come true I could ever possibly imagine.

On the night of Easter Sunday, 2025, I completed this Director's cut version of *The Mystic One*. In my dream that night, Jesus poured over my book and gave me much encouraging affirmation. He nodded his head often as I watched him read through it, and Jesus told me, "I likes it." (*Cut him a break. English isn't his first language after all.*)

This book wouldn't exist without the encouragement of my family, Jesus has given me. I am especially fond of you.

Dedicated to my sister Kristin Dewane. She is why this book exists. For years, she was my *only* encouragement to keep up with the writing. She has authored many books (Goodreads is showing thirteen distinct works at this time), including many novels and a devotional called *The Art of Stillness*. Check out her books and support her work. I doubt you will be disappointed. I couldn't put down a novel of hers that I read.

I hereby dedicate this book to my daughter:

💜 *Emma Josephine, Warrior Princess & Fire Master* 🔥

I remember fondly when my daughter, around ten years of age, filled with the Holy Spirit, prophesied messages straight from the heart of God, as her brother Shaj and I stood around fanning a fire into flames in our backyard (*Hence the “fire master”*). Emma encountered Jesus in a garden in her dream at the age of nine. This is her story in her own words:

I was over at my friend’s house looking at her gorgeous garden. I picked and ate a carrot as I enjoyed looking at the beautiful cabbages, radishes, and beans. I sensed Jesus in the plants and started crying. I said, “Thank you, Lord,” and suddenly my heart started beating faster and my spirit began to rise. I felt really happy as I sensed the Presence of Jesus behind me. I turned, and Jesus was there! He was wearing clothes similar to what is in the movie series *The Chosen*, and his skin was darker than mine. He had a beard, and his hair came just past his shoulders. I ran over to him and he said something to me. He set me free as he looked me in the eyes with love. I felt super happy 😊 and joyful. I felt like I was being hugged and lifted up, and I felt carefree. And then, I awoke.⁵⁶

It is our desire and prayer that you, the reader, will grow in your relationship with Jesus and begin to meet with Jesus on the regular. May your conversations and fellowship with the One who never leaves you or forsakes you never cease. <*He is a lot of fun!*>

⁵⁶ Emma’s aim is to include at least one emoji in every chapter.

I hereby dedicate this book to my eldest daughter:

♥ *Elisabeth Grace, Warrior Princess, Music*

Maestro & Comedy Genius 🎵

You saved me. Your love *saved* me! I forever cherish the love and connection we share. I will always love you with the relentless tenderness of Jesus. I will always laugh with you. I will always catch you when you jump into my arms. I adore you!

I hereby dedicate this book to my oldest son:

♥ *Elijah Ryan, Warrior Prince, you are a*

Rock 🪨 *and a Seer for Jesus* 🦒

My Shaj! I love you my little man! Your name means, "I AM the Mighty One's Little Prince". This was the name God picked out for you ten years before you were born! You are a bright shining beacon of joy and light and love of God to everyone who has the honor of knowing you. The rock means you are a sturdy foundation for God. *Rock on!*

I love seeing you develop in your skills and look forward with hope to what the future holds for you! I will always dedicate the song, Beautiful Boy, to you whenever I perform it... and try to hold back the tears. I remember playing it for you when you were three years old and you were draped over my shoulder on the couch...

Everyday, in every way, it's getting better and better... because of Jesus!

I hereby dedicate this book to my youngest son:

♥ *Ethan Aloysius Alexander Timothy*

Ragsdale the Third, Warrior Prince 🌳

“You shall be my cherry tree”, Jesus declares, “planted alongside the river of life, always bearing fruit. You shall never be uprooted or cut down.” — Prophetic word from Jesus

I remember the night I saw Ethan peering down from heaven, picking me out to be *your* papa. This, in answer to my prayer for another child. When I saw you, it made me want to go all out, G-rated! You make me want to be a better man. You inspired me when I beheld the purity and innocence in your eyes. You encouraged me to never entertain horror or fear another moment of my life. Your influence brings me, and will bring all who have the joy of knowing you, into the Safe and Good Way of Jesus and his Word!

May you see no evil 🙈 , hear no evil 🙈 , or speak no evil 🙈 every day of your life.

And finally... This book is dedicated to the Love of my life... my one and only... my confidant and best friend in all the world:

♥ *Catherine Jean, Warrior Queen* 👑

I can't live without ya, babe! I love you. Thank you for being you! I celebrate and honor you.

Acknowledgments

I am eternally grateful to Jesus. Yeshua, you have been a constant source of... well, Everything! Thank you, Yeshua, for being the perfect expression of Papa's heart for me... and Everyone! You have kept your every promise!

"You keep your promises, You're faithful and true, You are salvation, we trust in You. You send your angels to watch over us, You lead us and You guide us into love..." 🎵 — lyrics to the song, *In the Shadow of Shaddai*, by Daniel Lovett from Psalm 91.

I thank you for brilliantly bringing this book into existence. You have been lovely to work with. However painful my cognitive dissonance was at times, you never gave up on me! Your friendship and constant support is my "mithril backbone"! Thanks for all your gifts, and they just keep coming... one blessing after another, from glory to glory, grace heaped upon more grace...

THANK YOU!!! 🍏

I would like to thank my wife, Catherine Lovett. She stood by my side and encouraged me to actually *be* the mystic she knew I could be. And then, when it happened, she didn't freak out as much as *I* did. It would take an entire other book to properly sing her praises. She is a pure expression of the Father's heart!

I need to thank my kids... *and no, I don't mean my baby goats*. My children, Elisabeth, Emma, Elijah, and our little Ethan, born July 18th, 2025! ❤️ You remind me what heaven is like! I remember, and treasure fondly, every time I have experienced the joy of

looking into the souls of each one of you and seeing Papa's infinite ocean of LOVE! You saved me! You each are incarnations of Papa's heart! Each one of you is a precious gift to be treasured, honored, and loved! I thank God for sending my children on mission to this planet to be the change God wants to see here.

Each one of you has an infinitely bright future in Christ! I prayed for my team of prophets and prophetesses, and God has gifted me with *you*! Each of you are incredibly special, and I am trusting Jesus to provide you all the support you need for every step of the journey that Yeshua has charted for you!

I would like to thank my father, James Robert Lovett. He modeled for me the gentle, tender heart of Jesus. Now he runs with the buffalo in heaven's prairies... he told me so.

I would like to thank my mom, Marilyn. She raised me to love Jesus and prayed, "Lord seal that prayer on this boy's life," when I asked God if I could serve him with my life as a young boy. She emphatically said, "That was Jesus!" regarding the encounter I had with Jesus when he encouraged us all to read the Gospel of John. She taught me to honor and treasure the Scriptures. I love my mom dearly, and we will forever have amazing times together in heaven.

I had a dream once that she and I went shopping for a certain black guitar (which is now hanging on my wall) in the "Stuff Mart" of heaven... (and since it is heaven, my kids and I humbly request that Jesus would agree to a photo shoot doing various funny poses to be hung as GIANT posters on the walls of heaven's "Stuff Mart". We request that he don an Easter Bunny costume — perhaps about to eat a carrot looking mischievous, and to dress up as Santa Claus, and as Indiana Jones with a bullwhip, and many, many more! Daniel is requesting a statue of him near the central fountain of him posing as the "thinking man"... and yes, the Ten Commandments just occurred to me and I realize that the second

commandment will likely overrule this imagining, but it was fun while it lasted!)

I would like to thank my mom, Cindy Haese. She has always inspired us with her stories of encounters with Jesus, visions of heaven, and doing the works Jesus has prepared for her each and every day by listening to Jesus. One example of this is when she, by the leading of the Holy Spirit, reassured a lifelong Catholic of her eternal security based on the finished work of Christ. It is all the small things done with GREAT LOVE that have touched our hearts. You are a portal and a touch of heaven wherever you go and to everyone who has the pleasure of knowing you! Thanks for your support! You single-handedly saved this book from oblivion at Thanksgiving 2024 by lending your ear and feedback!

I would like to thank all the leadership staff at our home church at Elevation, in Green Bay, Wisconsin. It is nice to have a gathering place that doesn't crucify you for actually following Jesus.

Ryan Kibbe, I look forward to becoming the best buds that Jesus always imagined us to be. You are an inspiration, and I love you dearly. Thanks for modeling what this life is truly all about: family!

Aaron Peterson... the raccoon, who I am channeling right now, says: "I'm coming for you!" I trust that will bless your heart!

Julie Ferfecki, thank you for your amazing sensitivity to Holy Spirit and consistently leading us into the throne room! I still want to interview you about your encounters with Jesus and with the host of heaven. You have a chapter in the next book if you want it... I see you. It has been a joy for Catherine and me to be a part of the worship team.

I want to thank everyone else at Elevation church⁵⁷ who has inspired and blessed me and been part of my journey. Especially Paul Billing, who has contributed to this book (*Listening to Jesus* chapter) and to whom I owe more than I know. His friendship has meant the world to me. After sharing with him the content of some of this book, Paul experienced a visitation from our Bridegroom Jesus, who danced with him and called him his Beloved.

I owe many thanks to Pat Dietz, whose help with copy editing and feedback was invaluable. She could probably find a few things I missed and I likely and most probably drove her bonkers with my absurd stylistic choices... and humor. (did i mis' a coma?)

God has brought together such a group of mighty men and women at Elevation church! We are better together! Y'all are amazing! It has been my honor to work alongside each and every one of you!

I would like to thank my tribe in Appleton, Wisconsin... I am going to keep many of the names private, but you know who you are! Jesus is telling me to highlight a few names in particular.

Joseph Philip Roberts, you have been my dearest friend. Remember everything Yeshua has instilled, installed, and inspired within you! You are a *humble* General among us! As you well know, I could go on and on... and on... thank you for being my best friend and greatest encouragement and loving me by lending me your ear and listening to me as I externally processed the

⁵⁷ My first introduction to Elevation Church in Green Bay was through their "Kingdom Culture" conferences. The first person I met at Elevation, at the Kingdom Culture conference was Bill Vanderbush, the guest speaker and friend and mentor to Elevation church. Check out his ministry! He happens to be my third ever interview on *Sozo Talk Radio* and the reason I started my podcast to begin with. I began my podcast because Holy Spirit prompted me to promote and spread the word for Bill Vanderbush.

contents of this book with you, as well as SO much more!

Mike and Kim Cannon, who encouraged me just yesterday to obey Jesus. You encouraged Jesus and me to finish strong! Your faith is inspiring, and I see great things ahead for you two!

Darrell Springhetti: You are, and always will be, on Yeshua's radar! Thank you for your faithfulness to Jesus and for leading a most thriving men's group in the Fox Valley! Keep asking: 'What's next, Papa?' There are no limits in him! With God, all things are possible! Keep inspiring us!

I would like to thank all the contributors to this community project, which will no doubt go down in the annals of history as a work to remember. Y'all are legendary!

Brian Simmons, thank you for hearing from Jesus and writing such an amazing review! I was simply stunned when I received the email with Jesus' glowing words. Thank you for partnering with Jesus and Abba's heart. Note to everyone reading this: Connect with and get equipped with Brian at www.FireandPassion.com

Philip Arron McKenzie! Bro! You have inspired me, and it is an absolute pleasure to know you. Thank you for your "I don't care what they think, I'm gonna be on the cutting edge with Jesus" mentality! Everyone reading this, please drop everything you are doing right now and go buy his books!

Mystic Mama Margie Moormann: You are a delight! Reading your angel book has opened my world to Papa's kingdom, which is bigger than I ever imagined!

Lisa Perna! I appreciate you sister. You are modeling the freedom and joy of Jesus!

Florian Berndt: It's hard to not feel out of my league with a friend like you. You have always been so gracious and inspired me to be brave. I hope we grow closer in years to come.

We all want to thank all our celestial and space support among the host of heaven... how could we leave *you* out?!? We love you, angels! To all the Jedi in the ether: We cheer you on and encourage every bit of work you are doing as you carry out Papa's heart and intentions to flood the earth with His Goodness! Keep it up, space support! As your ground crew (and as ambassadors of both heaven and earth), we invite you, encourage you, and authorize you to continue your GREAT work!!!

Wm. Paul Young, thank you for your contribution to humanity by bringing the message from Papa: "I am especially fond of you!" My life changed, and I came to know the real Jesus all the more through reading your book, *The Shack... and all the rest of them!*

To the rest of the contributors, time (and space) would fail me to sing all your praises. Thank you for your contribution to this community project.

Graham Cooke, you are the only person I was unable to reach to ask for permission for the use of your material. Jesus told me that your stories belong to him and he gave them to me. You can sue me if you like. I will gladly give you whatever I own and declare bankruptcy just to afford your chapter.

**If you are not mentioned here it is likely because you are on special assignment from the Father and require secrecy to properly carry out your special mission from him. He doesn't want to blow your cover! You are doing great work! Besides... every one I mention here will be hunted down by the Gestapo and brutally tortured and then assassinated. If you are not mentioned, you are one of the lucky ones! SO sorry to everyone else! (At which point I recall the final words of Ant-Man from the end scene of the Marvel movie, Ant-Man and the Wasp: Quantumania, when he experiences a momentary panic, wondering whether his actions may have just inadvertently endangered the world and everyone he loved, but then optimistically dismisses his fear, calms himself, and says: "You know what? It's probably fine!")*

I would like to thank my cat , Cappuccino, who happens to be a sixth-density angel who travelled back in time to humble him/her self to be a cuddly bundle of awesome love to our family. I happen to be snuggling and kissing him/her right now. As a sixth-density angel, he/she does not identify as male or female... This is not a political or divisive statement at all, just an acknowledgment of what the Scripture declares: "In Christ there is neither male nor female, for you are all one in Christ Jesus." (Galatians 3:28) That is his/her message to us: Look beyond your labels to find that we are all *ONE*!

I would also like to thank every backyard squirrel  who has been such an inspiration to this book. I'm not sure if it would ever be the same without you. (That happens to be a code term for all our patrons and Patreon supporters... in case you are wondering... Yes, we named the backyard squirrels after you so we would remember you. (www.patreon.com/reflectworship))

A thousand thanks to St. Finnikin for his music and inspiration. He got me through a dark time. I still listen to Finn on repeat... often.

Lastly, I would like to thank my kids, and yes, this time I am referring to my baby goats... *You thought I was going to leave you out, did you?*  

Thank you for reading this
sample of:

The Mystic One!

— *Volume One* —

Let's Stay Connected! Subscribe to my Youtube channel,
"The Mystic One": [https://www.youtube.com/
@DanielLovett](https://www.youtube.com/@DanielLovett)

Join the Christian Mystic community page at:
www.facebook.com/themysticalchristian

Daniel Lovett's music can be found at:
www.reflectworship.com or www.reflect.bandcamp.com

Sozo Talk Radio, hosted by Daniel Lovett:
www.sozotalkradio.com

♥ If you want to support all that I am doing with my nursing home ministry, sponsor episodes on The Mystic One podcast (formerly Sozo Talk Radio), and support the worship music we produce, you are welcome to join the team and become a patron @ www.patreon.com/reflectworship

Please contact me, Daniel Lovett, and let me know how you enjoyed this book at: thebandreflect@gmail.com (if you have had an encounter with Jesus, I would likely be interested in having you as a guest on my show.)

I would highly recommend subscribing to Daniel Lovett's Blog: www.daniellovett.com

"This is love, not that we loved God but that he loved us." — 1 John 4:10 NIV

"But you will receive power when the Holy Spirit comes upon you. And you will be my witnesses, telling people about me everywhere—in Jerusalem, throughout Judea, in Samaria, and to the ends of the earth." — Acts 1:8 NLT

"Stop Censoring Me!"

Afterword <After the Credits Roll Bonus Scene>

Captains Log, Star Date: 11132024

On the drive up to lead worship for the youth group at Elevation Church, where both of my girls lead worship with me, Jesus spoke to me: "When are you going to stop censoring me?"

An hour later, I stand before a group of kids, and Jesus has a message prepared that he wants me to share. However, I don't seem to have the courage to share *any* of it. Jesus wants to confront an issue in the hearts of everyone in the room, and I am too afraid to bring it up.

The worship sesh' was nearly a complete failure... in heaven's opinion... for, "obedience is better than sacrifice," an' all that. Sure, I played and sang all the right notes, and I even tried to circle back around to the message that Jesus wanted to discuss with these kids at a certain point in the set, but it was already too late to address it and get into it the way Jesus had wanted to.

It was too late, and I missed it.

What did Jesus want to talk about?

I know this might seem annoying, but my sincere question is: Do you really want to know?

Fair warning: There is no going back after this. You can't unhear what you are about to hear from Jesus. This is how it is with Jesus.

So... do you want to know?

Yes?

Alrighty then.

Here is what Jesus shared with me that I was to say:

At the previous Sunday's sermon, Pastor Ryan Kibbe shared the miracle of when Joshua commanded the sun and moon to stand still in the sky, and God listened to the voice of a man. (See Joshua 10:12-14). The sun stood still in the sky for a whole extra day!

Can we pause for a moment to ask, "What in the heck?" Given what we "know" about science, isn't this impossible? The Earth doesn't just pause in its rotation. What would happen if it did? How would this miracle be 'scientifically' explained?

I don't know.

Secondly, I want to ask you all, "Do you *actually* believe this miracle *really* happened?"

In the podcast called "History that Doesn't Suck", I learned that Thomas Jefferson, America's third president, did not believe in the miracles of Jesus. He took it upon himself to rewrite the Gospels. He removed every single miracle and released his own translation.

I can hear Jesus saying: "Can you believe the nerve that he had to do this? He did not believe in me. Notice I did not say, 'he does not believe in me', but that was not his finest hour."

Do you realize that we all do the same thing when we don't believe that God is a miracle-working God? If we did, we would study this out. We would do proper research into who is finding success *and how!* We would read the books of the ones who have pursued the gift of healing, for instance. We would, at the very least, study to show ourselves approved to receive the gift of healing, or gift of __ (fill in the blank with a spiritual gift) __ ourselves!

Do you know that God intends for you to be a miracle worker? Brian Simmons was shown, in the library of heaven, a volume entitled: "John, Chapter Twenty-Two". This volume is a metaphor for all the many miracles WE would do in this Great Awakening. Brian had desperately wanted to smuggle this book out of heaven but was told by the angels, 'You will receive this volume at the proper time, and you will be a key figure in the coming Great Awakening.'

Jesus says that we will do the same mighty miracles he has done... and more:

"I tell you this timeless truth: The person who follows me in faith, believing in me, will do the same mighty miracles that I do—even greater miracles than these because I go to be with my Father!" — Jesus, John 14:12

All of heaven is waiting for those of us who will begin to believe and then do the same works Jesus has done... and more.

I once researched whether anyone has ever walked on water like Jesus did. I found a story about a missionary who, along with his whole team, traversed a raging river, finding a solid footing mere inches below the surface. When onlookers tried to go into

these same waters, they plunged into water over their heads. I have had dreams of my own children playing out on the water... the days are coming when we will see that “all things are possible for those who believe.”

The Scripture encourages us to earnestly seek after spiritual gifts. Jesus says, “Ask and keep on asking and you will receive!” As we persevere and diligently seek God for the manifestations of his love in this world (because that is what miracles are *truly* all about), we build within ourselves the capacity and room within our being to house the gifts that Papa eagerly gives! BUT, you must persevere it into reality. The reason you must persevere is that you must remove the conflict within yourself. You must be single in your focus, with undivided loyalty, for God has said that one with divided loyalty cannot receive anything from the Lord:

“If you need wisdom, ask our generous God, and he will give it to you. He will not rebuke you for asking. But when you ask him, be sure that your faith is in God alone. Do not waver, for a person with divided loyalty is as unsettled as a wave of the sea that is blown and tossed by the wind. Such people should not expect to receive anything from the Lord. Their loyalty is divided between God and the world, and they are unstable in everything they do.”
— James 1:5-8 NLT

Jesus insisted that we view him as fully human — that he was a man just like us. He emphasizes this by saying that he is “the firstborn among many brothers”, and by insisting on the title “Bar Nasha” or “Son of Man”, which is the Hebrew and Greek idiom for “human being”.

It can be argued that Jesus was truly the Only human being who ever lived. Think about it. Humans are created in the image of God; created in the image of Perfect Love. Only Jesus lived his life

completely and without fail, completely devoted to and flowing in the Perfect Love of Papa. It is only “in Christ” that we truly find our own humanity. It is only in connection to, and reliance and absolute dependence on God, that we manifest the miracles that God desires to see manifested in this world. Why does he long for miracles to be made manifest?

To reveal His LOVE.

Jesus wanted to confront our disbelief, our unbelief, at youth group that day. The truth is, he wanted to confront my own unbelief. Perhaps he is confronting your own unbelief right now! Our unbelief is rooted in fear.

Jim Carrey had this to say regarding fear:

“Now, fear is going to be a player in your life, but you get to decide how much. You can spend your whole life imagining ghosts, worrying about the pathway to the future. But all there will ever be is what’s happening here, and the decisions we make in this moment, which are based in love or fear.

So many of us choose our path out of fear disguised as practicality. What we really want seems so out of reach and ridiculous to expect, so we never dare to ask the universe for it... Your need for acceptance can make you invisible in this world. Don’t let anything stand in the way of the light that shines through this form. Risk being seen in all of your glory.”

What if Jim is wrong?

What “if” fear doesn’t have to, or even get to, be a “player” in your life?

What “if” Jesus has already decided on your behalf that fear is a negative emotion (a debilitating frequency of hell) that he died to acquire? It belongs to him now, and he says:

“GIVE ME BACK MY STUFF!!!”

Fear is your resistance. Fear is there to remind you what love isn't. Fear plays an important role as it reveals the shadow, or the contrast, to love. Learn from it.

What was that absolutely terrifying dark force called in the movie, *A Wrinkle in Time*?

I'm going to call it fear.

What if you paid it no heed?

What if you stopped answering its call?

What if you stepped into the perfect love of your Papa's heart and let his hugs and his Perfect Love drive out all fear, just as he promises to do?

There is nothing to fear but fear itself, it has been said. But why even bother with that?

Be fearless.

It's your birthright as a son or daughter of God.

Give fear when it deserves... Nothing

What if we said to unbelief and fear, and to the enemy who represents these frequencies, what Neo said at the close of *The Matrix*:

“I know you're out there. I can feel you now. I know that you're afraid... you're afraid of us. You're afraid of change. I

don't know the future. I didn't come here to tell you how this is going to end. I came here to tell you how it's going to begin... I'm going to show these people what you don't want them to see. I'm going to show them a world without you. A world without rules and controls, without borders or boundaries. A world where anything is possible..." (Source: The Matrix)

Where we go from here is a choice I leave to you. The choice is yours, you know. You can live your life out of Jesus Christ and experience his kingdom, his world, where anything is possible. He will show you a world without fear or unbelief... without borders or boundaries.

Romans chapter eight mentions a phrase about the revealing of the sons and daughters of God on this earth. Heaven is waiting and watching with bated breath for the revealing of the sons and daughters of God to be revealed and for the fulfillment of the "John twenty-two" works of God to be made manifest on this earth!

Mark's Gospel ends with the statement: "These signs will follow those that believe..." Let's read the passage from Mark's Gospel:

"Then Jesus appeared before the eleven apostles as they were eating a meal. He corrected them for having such hard, unbelieving hearts because they did not believe those who saw him after his resurrection. And he said to them, "As you go into all the world, preach openly the wonderful news of the gospel to the entire human race! Whoever believes the good news and is baptized will be saved, and whoever does not believe the good news will be

condemned. And these miracle signs will accompany those who believe: They will drive out demons in the power of my name. They will speak in tongues. They will be supernaturally protected from snakes and from drinking anything poisonous. And they will lay hands on the sick and heal them.” After saying these things, Jesus was lifted up into heaven and sat down at the place of honor at the right hand of God! And the apostles went out announcing the good news everywhere, as the Lord himself consistently worked with them, validating the message they preached with miracle-signs that accompanied them!” — Mark 16:14-20 TPT

I need you to hear what I am about to tell you:

None of this kingdom business is just about what you do!!! NO!
It’s about who... you... are!

“The entire universe is standing on tiptoe, yearning to see the unveiling of God’s glorious sons and daughters!” — Romans 8:19 TPT

Remember who you are!

Even if there was nothing that came of your time on earth that the world would consider a “miracle”, the greatest miracle of all is YOU! Your love in this world is all the miracle any of us needs. The love that God will reveal in you and through you and to you is the greatest miracle of all!

I’ll say it again: you are the miracle we all need. May you live loved! And may you live a loving life! As you begin to realize that Papa loves you with the very same love as he loves Yeshua, you will radiate God’s love. This is all God wants and all Jesus has ever

asked of you. Because, as his word says, you will love, because he first loves you!

Time to begin the greatest adventure of your life! To live in and live out of the love of God!

“This resurrection life you received from God is not a timid, grave-tending life. It’s adventurously expectant, greeting God with a childlike “What’s next, Papa?”

Summon your courage and follow Jesus into this adventure of a lifetime. As my daughter Elisabeth has written:

“To start adventuring is important.”

As you follow Jesus, he may just lead you on a hitchhiking adventure of your own⁵⁸... but probably not. Jesus might just call you to paddle a canoe from the headwaters of the Mississippi to the Gulf of America like my friend Peter Frank has done... but probably not. Or, Jesus may lead you to try out for the worship team at church, to learn the guitar, and begin a music ministry to nursing homes like he did for the entity currently known as Daniel Lovett... Daniel certainly hopes he can inspire some to follow this path!

Jesus is committed to leading you to show other-centered, self-giving practical love to everyone you come into contact with for the rest of your life and into eternity. How that love displays itself will *ALWAYS* be a miracle in Papa’s eyes.

“What’s next, Papa?”

⁵⁸ I am saving my “Hitchhiking Adventure with God” chapter for the next book: *The Mystic One — Volume Two*

The following is a preview of:

The Mystic One

— Volume Two —

Daniel Lovett

“Are ye angry at Me because I have made a man every whit whole on the Sabbath day?” — Jesus, John 7:23 KJ21

“God has not given us a spirit of fear but of power and love and a sound mind.” — 2 Timothy 1:7 NKJV

Every Whit Whole

Daniel Lovett

The following is a profound dream the Lord blessed me with on the final night of a Spring 2024 Florida vacation:

I walked with my friends Mike and Joe down to a coffee shop. I was sullen, discouraged, and depressed because I had forgotten my true identity in Christ. As we walked, we talked about what a blessing this woman who operates this coffee shop is to the community. We discussed the loving atmosphere and the service she provided to everyone.

We arrived just as she was closing up shop.

"I'm sorry, gentlemen, I just closed," she said, holding a large carafe of coffee in her arms, poised to pour it down the sink drain. Before she did so, I asked her, "Do you have any extra coffee that we could have?"

She stopped herself from pouring the coffee out, she thought for a moment, and I saw her make a decision.

"Sure."

She then brought the carafe of coffee out to the back patio and brought out several mugs for the remaining coffee. I filled my mug

and took a sip of one of the best cups of coffee I had ever experienced.

As we stood outside at a table, she went inside and gathered up all the treats that didn't sell that day and placed them out on the tables for the entire neighborhood. All of a sudden, everyone started to appear from nearby apartments. The place started humming with people as the community came together for this spontaneous celebration.

The generosity of the woman opened my heart, and I began to lift out of my depression. By now, I had two cinnamon rolls in my hands, each with a bite out of them, when my friend Joe called me over.

He was examining a cinnamon roll he had unrolled. A message was written with cinnamon inside his roll in an unknown foreign language. It seemed to resemble ancient Hebrew, but it wasn't anything I had ever seen before. "There seems to be a message inside my cinnamon roll," he said. "Can you tell me what it says?"

I looked it over and knew immediately that the message read, "Every whit whole."

I didn't trust myself to share this, however, and Joe began to understand it and receive the message himself.

I think it says, "Every... whit..."

"WHOLE!" I burst out. "Every whit whole!"

"See?" Joe chimed in, "The prophet has confirmed it."

At this, I was filled with the Holy Spirit.

A young man from the neighborhood grabbed a guitar and started leading everyone in a song entitled One Love. I began to dance ecstatically before the Lord, even to the point of thrashing around, expressing something very primal and deeply spiritual. I went on like this for some time until I realized people were watching me, so I changed it up to something more pleasing to the eyes of others.

I began chanting, "We all bow to the One Love! We all bow to the One Love!"

As everyone started chanting this mantra, I began to rise into the air and levitate. The scene immediately changed before my eyes. I was now hovering above a busy walkway outside what appeared to be a university in Southeast Asia. I began to speak in the language of these people, perfectly fluent, to some of the students who passed below me.

I knew I was speaking mysteries to them about their relationship with God and their identity in God. I knew that at one point, I used the word "Singh," which I later learned means "lionhearted". One young lady stared up at me as she walked and accidentally bumped her head.

"I am so sorry that happened to you," I told her in her language.

I then saw another young woman who I knew needed to experience the love of the Father. I descended to her and hugged her with Papa's love.

I awoke completely stunned!

Note: I believe that I may have actually spirit-travelled (and perhaps even time-travelled) in this adventure with Yeshua. This was not the first time, nor will it likely be the last, that I have done so. It was truly amazing to be able to speak in this other language that I have never studied to these Southeast Asian students. I anticipate the day when one of them contacts me and says, "I was there! I remember you!"

This gift of speaking in tongues, along with every other spiritual gift, is available to all who walk in the Spirit and become a Padawan to our Master Jedi Yeshua Hamashiach!

I rolled out of bed and lifted my arms in triumph. "The sons of God revealed!" I SHOUTED... as quietly as I could, so as not to wake my wife.

Lessons from the dream:

God used this dream in my life as a significant teaching moment. The phrase "every whit whole" is from the King James Version and speaks of being made completely whole, including possessing a sound mind.

"God has not given us a spirit of fear but of power and love and a sound mind." — 2 Timothy 1:7 NKJV

The depression that I suffered from in this dream reflected my perspective and experience for a significant portion of my life. Depression had stolen so much joy and goodness that could have been. Depression had stolen so much time and energy and robbed me of experiencing the joy of living in the truth of my identity in Christ. Depression is a fallen perspective of reality rooted in fear. Depression is not a fruit of the Holy Spirit. God does not partner with the frequency of depression, fear, hopelessness, or despair. He is above all negativity and calls us to resonate with and ascend into the frequency of heaven. We are called to resonate with who I AM is. He is the God of hope who gives us a future and a hope. We suffer depression when we take our eyes off Jesus. We depress ourselves when we do not trust Jesus or when we fail to believe in Jesus. We lose hope when we forget who we are in Christ.

But... Jesus hangs on to our hope for us. He never forgets who we truly are and meets us and greets us with Papa's love and compassion. Jesus remembers on our behalf who we are, and he will always be faithful to remind us of who we are as his redeemed and Beloved.

I thought it was most significant that it was an act of kindness and generosity that lifted my spirit into the frequency of heaven out of the depression of self-rejection. This coffee shop owner opened her heart with generosity, which in turn opened and healed my heart, changing the atmosphere of the whole community and sparking a spontaneous revival. This is the power that we each possess to change our world through our expressions of love and generosity. This manifests heaven on earth. This power is within your ability as you abide in the vine... as you remain in the Truth of who Christ is.

I stepped into the acceptance of who I am in Christ when my prophetic gifting was honored by my friend Joe. The Scriptures say, "For the gifts and the calling of God are irrevocable [for He does not withdraw what He has given, nor does He change His mind about those to whom He gives His grace or to whom He sends His call]." (Romans 11:29 AMP)

Honor brought me back to life. Honor brought the best out of me.

Jesus has said:

"Anyone who wants to serve me must follow me, because my servants must be where I am. And the Father will honor anyone who serves me." — John 12:26 NLT

After having experienced the refreshing life-giving water of honor and acceptance for myself from God, I cannot overstate how important it is for us all to come into agreement with the Father and honor the ones who God honors... for the worlds sake. Honor releases you to be who you are. Honor is the Way of heaven.

Jesus couldn't do many miracles in Nazareth except heal a few sick people because he was not honored in his hometown. Jesus said in response to this, "A prophet is not without honor except in his hometown, and among his relatives, and in his own house." (Mark 6:4 NET)

Jesus said:

"In addition, the Father judges no one. Instead, he has given the Son absolute authority to judge, so that everyone will honor the Son, just as they honor the Father. Anyone who does not honor the Son is certainly not honoring the Father who sent him." — John 5:22-23 NLT

Jesus speaks a great deal about honor and emphasizes how extremely vital it is that you prioritize living only for the honor that comes from God. He chastises his audience at one point for pursuing only the honor that comes from people and disregarding the honor that comes from only from God. This is what we might call choosing the fear of man over the fear of God. Whom shall you regard? Whose approval matters more? Will you be the kind of person who cares more about the honor that only comes from God? There may be times where the circumstances of life will test this in your life.

Who is Worthy of Honor?

Scripture encourages us to "honor all men" (1 Peter 2:17). We are to treat everyone with respect and dignity. Everyone has inherent worth as someone who God chose to lovingly create as his own child. God is telling us how to bring about the Awakening. We all awaken to our true and beautiful selves as soon as we begin to put honor into practice.

You cannot receive honor without being a person who gives honor. Jesus says it is more blessed to give than to receive. Be an honor giver! And leave the rest to God.

Jesus has honored us with his irrevocable call and gifting. He never changes his mind about you. He who began a good work will be faithful to complete it.

Remember: Jesus cannot think an unloving thought about you. He will forevermore, without fail, honor you with Father's affection. Yeshua and Papa are especially fond of *you!!!*

Note from Author:

If I offended you, dear reader, by anything I wrote, I would ask you to please do me the honor of queueing up the song, “Forgive Me,” by Branch (from the animated show, Trolls) on Spotify.

As you listen, know that my heart is singing right along, note for note, with every bit of passion and gusto that Branch so brilliantly delivers.

With utmost sincerity, and deepest heartfelt sympathy,

Daniel Lovett

Ps (Also, I would recommend John Beveré’s book, The Bait of Satan ...spoiler alert! To take up an offense is to take the bait of Satan.)

About the Author:

Hello, all you Awakening Wonders!

My name is Daniel Lovett, and I was born at a very young age... *Wait, what is happening here? Is this a short Bio? Or is it supposed to be a résumé? What exactly does one put in an "About the Author" section, anyway?*



Let's begin again...

I am a free son of God. And, like William Wallace in *Braveheart*, I champion freedom, for God has said:

"It is for freedom that Christ has set you free, so don't let yourself get enslaved again!" — Galatians 5:1

"FREEDOM!!!"

I love people! I love seeing people catch the freedom Christ brings to our lives. God told me today that He created life to be enjoyed and have fun! Joy is the serious business of heaven! God desires to free us from stodgy (dull and uninspired) religion. He doesn't like it. He doesn't like how religion has enslaved us, rather than free us to enjoy life as his free sons and daughters.

Jesus *loves* to see his children walk in the freedom he created us to enjoy! Jesus created us to belong and to be a celebrated member of His royal family. Check out the song *Royalty* by St. Finnikin!

"Once a king or queen of Narnia, always a king or queen of Narnia." — C.S. Lewis

This is what true faith is all about... To live in your true identity as the Beloved son or daughter of God that you are! You are created to be loved and to enjoy the abundant life that Jesus is and gives!

“A thief has only one thing in mind—he wants to steal, slaughter, and destroy. But I have come to give you everything in abundance, more than you expect—life in its fullness until you overflow!” — Jesus, John 10:10 TPT

How'my doin? Am I doing this correctly? What's that? Oh, you wanted my résumé? Whatever for?

So... I play a few roles in life:

I am a homeschool dad. My wife Catherine and I have been married since 2001 and we just welcomed our fourth child, Ethan Alexander, to our family. (*I published this book the day he was born.*)

I've been a musicianary, (*and yes, I just combined the words musician and missionary*) mainly to the elderly in nursing homes since 2006. I have led worship in churches with my wife since 2001.

My main message in every concert is: “Jesus loves you more than you think he does.” My signature song is “Yes, You Are the One,” which is my own Gospel version of *Mrs. Robinson* by Simon and Garfunkel. (*Angels suggested I rewrite that song and then helped me when I did... I LOVE IT!!!*)

My wife and I are singer/songwriters and have recorded several Christian music albums. I love writing songs!

Listen @ www.reflect.bandcamp.com or visit our website @ www.reflectworship.com.

One of my greatest joys in life is to teach songwriting to the children at our Homeschool co-op group called EPIC (Encouraging People in Christ). We wrote some EPIC songs!

I love comedy and the thespian arts of performance and acting. Daniel is a *HUGE* fan of clean comedy, *good* movies, books, and music... and talking about himself in the third person. (It's nice to get a break from yourself... don't knock it till you try it.) I enjoy running 5ks on wooded trails while listening to excellent music (St. Finnikin!). I enjoy good conversations with friends around a fire.

Speaking of good friends...

Jesus is my most faithful friend. He speaks to me through dreams and visions, daily Divine conversations, synchronicities (like picking up an Uber ride at 1:17 at a 1717 address), angels, movies, other people... come to think of it, when is he *not* speaking? Once you start to listen, you will come to learn this for yourself.

Many encounters with Jesus have transformed my life. I write about them in this book series, *The Mystic One*. While the books are a community project, they also carry the character arc of my own personal transformation story. I am, and continue to be, transformed by the love of Jesus! (I even wrote a song called *Transformed*, which you can listen to on the album, *Reflect Love* @ www.reflect.bandcamp.com).

My greatest joy is to introduce people to the real Jesus, in whose presence there is fullness of JOY! I love Jesus, and I love the people! Jesus once told me:

"I created you to love you."

I invite you, dear reader, to delve into the marvelous mystical depths of a love relationship with our Savior, our Good Shepherd and Guardian of our souls, our Great and Merciful High Priest, the Lover of our souls, Jesus Christ (Yeshua Hamashiach).

Connect with Daniel! Entity currently known as Daniel Lovett is a podcaster at his YouTube channel: The Mystic One @ <https://www.youtube.com/@DanielLovett>

Subscribe and join the conversation!

I trust you have enjoyed this book! If so, start a book club!

The end... *or is it?*

Join me in:

The Mystic One

— *Volume Two* —

"So now we can rejoice in our wonderful new relationship with God because our Lord Jesus Christ has made us friends of God." (Romans 5:11 NLT)